

SYNOPSIS

OF THE

FAITH AND DOCTRINES

OF THE CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST OF

LATTER-DAY SAINTS.

COMPILED FROM THE BIBLE,
BOOK OF MORMON, DOCTRINE AND COVENANTS,
AND OTHER PUBLICATIONS OF THE
CHURCH;

WITH AN APPENDIX,

CONTAINING AN EPITOME OF ECCLESIASTICAL
HISTORY AND A CHRONOLOGY OF IMPORT-
ANT EVENTS IN THE HISTORY OF THE
LATTER-DAY WORK.

PUBLISHED BY THE REORGANIZED CHURCH
OF JESUS CHRIST OF LATTER-DAY SAINTS.

PLANO,
KENDALL CO., ILLINOIS:

1865.

✓

Reps
Coul

PREFACE.

The chief design in the publication of this work is to supply the saints with a more complete arrangement of scriptural and other evidences which demonstrate the truth of the doctrines of the Latter-Day Saints.

In addition to extracts from, and references to the Bible, Book of Mormon and Book of Doctrine and Covenants, we have given extracts from other publications of the church for the purpose of elucidating the faith and doctrines of the church. The peculiar circumstances with which we are now surrounded and the increase of sects and schisms renders this course necessary and expedient. By placing such a work in the hands of the inquirer after the ways of life, as well as the expounder of the truth, we feel confident the spread of the gospel light will be increased, and an additional means provided for the prosecution of the work of the ministry. In any arrangement of quotations for the purpose of convincing people who profess a belief in the Bible only of the truth of a doctrine which we believe in, the extracts are given from the Bible only, but that the saints may have an opportunity of comparing these extracts from the Bible, references to the publications of the church are in some instances given. The difficulties attendant on the first compilation of a work of this kind are very great, hence perfection in its compilation is not claimed in the least. It is a work which necessarily requires tedious research and we are well aware

gift - service Johnson April 1930

that a great improvement on this first attempt might be made by making an additional research but this would delay the publication of the work.

Notes of references to other publications of the church are given for the purpose of enabling our readers to see how the extracts from the Bible and other publications are applied to the subjects under consideration.

When the reader is unable to see the application of any quotation which has one of these references connected with it, he can see how it has been applied by those who have written for these publications. By this arrangement the necessity of numerous explanations in this Synopsis is avoided.

We trust that this work will materially assist the saints in their researches for evidences of the truth of the doctrines of the Church, insomuch that their researches may be systematized and a wider range of thought and study be indulged in. That they may be incited to a more careful consideration of the Doctrines of Christ; and that a more general knowledge of the scriptures may be diffused. There has long been a necessity for this, but as perfection is the outgrowth of continued effort, we trust that we may ultimately be blessed with an improved work from the pen of some able and industrious man that shall give a more complete arrangement than this. It is not designed to prevent, but to facilitate the study of the scriptures. Passages which are often used to support conflicting religious tenets are also inserted in this work that they and their contexts may be easily found, so that our readers may be able to show the fallacy of incorrect applications.

SYNOPSIS.

AARONIC PRIESTHOOD.

WHEREAS: many assert that the revelations to the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints contradict the Bible on this subject, the following scriptural proofs to the contrary are given.

Ex. xxviii. 43. And they (the before mentioned garments, &c.) shall be upon Aaron, and upon his sons, when they come in unto the tabernacle of the congregation, or when they come near unto the altar to minister in the holy place; that they bear not iniquity, and die: it shall be a statute for ever unto him and his seed after him.

Ex. xxix. 9. And thou shalt gird them with girdles (Aaron and his sons) and put the bonnets on them; and the priest's office shall be theirs FOR A PERPETUAL STATUTE: and thou shalt consecrate Aaron and his sons. (a)

Num. xxv. 11. Phinehas, the son of Eleazar, the son of Aaron the priest, hath turned my wrath away from the children of Israel, while he was zealous for my sake among them, that I consumed not the children of Israel in my jealousy.

H (a) v. 3. p. 138.—In this and other notes, H means Herald, v. volume and p. page.

12. Wherefore say, Behold, I give unto him my covenant of peace :

13. And he shall have it, and his seed after him, *even the covenant of an everlasting priesthood*; because he was zealous for his God, and made an atonement for the children of Israel. (a)

1 Maccabees ii. 54. Phinees our father in being zealous and fervent obtained the covenant of an everlasting priesthood. (b)

Jer. xxxiii. 14. Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will perform that good thing which I have promised unto the house of Israel and to the house of Judah.

15. In those days, and at that time, will I cause the Branch of righteousness to grow up unto David; and he shall execute judgment and righteousness in the land.

16. In those days shall Judah be saved, and Jerusalem shall dwell safely; and this is the name wherewith she shall be called, The Lord our righteousness.

17. For thus saith the Lord: David shall never want a man to sit upon the throne of the house of Israel;

18. Neither shall the priests the Levites

(a) Herald v. 3. p. 138.

want a man before me to offer burnt offerings, and to kindle meat offerings, and to do sacrifice continually. (b)

See Ezek. xl-xlviii., and the marginal notes in the Bible. Notice particularly Ezek. xlvii. 6-13.

Joel iii. 16. The Lord also shall roar out of Zion, and utter his voice from Jerusalem; and the heavens and the earth shall shake: but the Lord will be the hope of his people, and the strength of the children of Israel.

17. So shall ye know that I am the Lord your God dwelling in Zion my holy mountain: then shall Jerusalem be holy, and there shall no strangers pass through her any more.

18. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the mountains shall drop down new wine, and the hills shall flow with milk, and all the rivers of Judah shall flow with waters, and *a fountain shall come forth of the house of the Lord*, and shall water the valley of Shittim. (c)

Zech. xiv. 8. And it shall be in that day, that living waters shall go out from Jerusalem; half of them toward the former sea,

(b) H. v. 3. p. 139. (c) H. v. 3. p. 140.

and half of them toward the hinder sea: in summer and in winter shall it be.

9. And the Lord shall be King over all the earth: in that day shall there be one Lord, and his name one. (c)

Ezek. xlvi. 35. The name of the city from that day shall be, The Lord is there. (c)

Ezek. xlii. 13. Then said he unto me, The north chambers and the south chambers which are before the separate place, they be holy chambers, where the priests that approach unto the Lord shall eat the most holy things; there shall they lay the most holy things, and the meat-offering, and the sin-offering, and the trespass offering; for the place is holy.

14. When the priests enter therein, then shall they not go out of the holy place into the outer court, but there they shall lay their garments wherein they minister; for they are holy; and shall put on other garments, and shall approach to those things which are for the people. (d)

See Nehemiah xiii. 4-9. (d)

Ezek. xliii. 18. And he said unto me, Son of man, thus saith the Lord God: These are the ordinances of the altar in the

(c) II. v. 3. p. 140. (d) II. v. 3, p. 141.

day when they shall make it, to offer burnt offerings thereon, and to sprinkle blood thereon.

19. And thou shalt give to the priests the Levites that be of the seed of Zadok, which approach unto me, to minister unto me, saith the Lord God, a young bullock for a sin offering. (d)

See Lev. 1 c.; Ex. xxix. 10; 1 Chron. xxiv. 1-19; Ezek. xliv. 6-16. (d)

1 Sam. ii. 35. And I will raise me up a faithful priest, that shall do according to that which is in mine heart and in my mind; and I will build him a sure house; and he shall walk before mine anointed for ever.

36. And it shall come to pass, that every one that is left in thine house shall come and crouch to him for a piece of silver and a morsel of bread, and shall say, Put me, I pray thee, into one of the priests' offices, that I may eat a piece of bread. (e)

See 1 Sam. iv. (e)

Mal. iii. 1. Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me, and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight

(d.) H. v. 3. p. 141. (e) H. v. 3, p. 142.

in ; Behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of hosts.

2. But who may abide the day of his coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth ; for he is like a refiner's fire, and like fuller's soap.

3. And he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver, and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness.

4. Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the Lord, as in the days of old, and as in former years.

5. And I will come near to you to judgment, and I will be a swift witness against the sorcerers, and against the adulterers, and against false swearers, and against those that oppress the hireling in his wages, the widow, and the fatherless, and that turn aside the stranger from his right, and fear not me saith the Lord of hosts. (e)

Ezra ii. 61. And the children of the priests: the children of Habaiah, the children of Koz, the children of Barzillai: which took a wife of the daughters of Barzillai the Gileadite, and was called after their name :

(e) H. v. 3. p. 142.

62. These sought their register among those that were reckoned by genealogy, but they were not found: therefore were they, as polluted, put from the priesthood.

63. And the Tirshatha said unto them, that they should not eat of the most holy things, till there stood up a priest with Urim and with Thummin. (f.)

See Zech. vi. 9-15, and Zech. 3 c., and compare these references with Ex. xxix. 6, xxviii. c., Lev. viii. 1-13, and Ezek. xlv. 17-24. (g.)

Isa. lxvi. 15. For behold, the Lord will come with fire, and with his chariots like a whirlwind, to render his anger with fury, and his rebuke with flames of fire.

16. For by fire and by his sword will the Lord plead with all flesh; and the slain of the Lord shall be many.

17. They that sanctify themselves, and purify themselves in the gardens behind one tree in the midst, eating swine's flesh, and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be consumed together, saith the Lord.

20. And they shall bring all your brethren for an offering unto the Lord, out of all nations, upon horses, and in chariots,

(f) H. v. 3, p. 153. (g) H. v. 3, p. 154.

and in litters, and upon mules, and upon swift beasts, to my holy mountain Jerusalem, saith the Lord, as the children of Israel bring an offering in a clean vessel into the house of the Lord.

21. And I will also take of them for priests and for Levites, saith the Lord.

22. For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before me, saith the Lord, so shall your seed and your name remain.

23. And it shall come to pass, that from one new moon to another, and from one Sabbath to another, shall all flesh come to worship before me, saith the Lord.

Isa. lxxv. 2. I have spread out my hands all the day unto a rebellious people, which walketh in a way that was not good, after their own thoughts ;

3. A people that provoketh me to anger continually to my face ; that sacrificeth in gardens, and burneth incense upon altars of brick ;

4. Which remain among the graves, and lodge in the monuments, which eat swine's flesh, and broth of abominable things is in their vessels. (h.)

(h) H. v. 3, p. 155.

+ Jer. xxxiii. 19. And the word of the Lord came unto Jeremiah, saying,

20. Thus saith the Lord: If ye can break my covenant of the day, and my covenant of the night, and that there should not be day and night in their season;

21. Then may also my covenant be broken with David my servant, that he should not have a son to reign upon his throne; and with the Levites the priests, my ministers.

22. As the host of heaven cannot be numbered, neither the sand of the sea measured: so will I multiply the seed of David my servant, and the Levites that minister unto me.

23. Moreover the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah, saying,

24. Considerest thou not what this people have spoken, saying, The two families which the Lord hath chosen, he hath even cast them off? thus they have despised my people, that they should be no more a nation before them.

25. Thus saith the Lord; If my covenant be not with day and night, and if I have not appointed the ordinances of heaven and earth;

26. Then will I cast away the seed of

Jacob, and David my servant, so that I will not take any of his seed to be rulers over the seed of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob: for I will cause their captivity to return, and have mercy on them. (i.)

Isa. i. 26. And I will restore thy judges as at the first, and thy counsellors as at the beginning: afterward thou shalt be called, The city of righteousness, the faithful city. (i.)

Gen. viii. 22. While the earth remaineth, seed time and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night, shall not cease. (i.)

Zech. xiv. 16. And it shall come to pass, that every one that is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem, shall even go up from year to year to worship the King, the Lord of hosts, and to keep the feast of tabernacles.

17. And it shall be, that whoso will not come up of all the families of the earth unto Jerusalem to worship the King, the Lord of hosts, even upon them shall be no rain.

18. And if the family of Egypt go not up, and come not, that have no rain; there shall be the plague, wherewith the Lord

(i) II. v. 3, p. 156.

will smite the heathen that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles.

19. This shall be the punishment of Egypt, and the punishment of all nations that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles.

20. In that day shall there be upon the bells of the horses, holiness unto the Lord; and the pots in the Lord's house shall be like the bowls before the altar.

21. Yea, every pot in Jerusalem and in Judah shall be holiness unto the Lord of hosts: and all they that sacrifice shall come and take of them, and seethe therein: and in that day there shall be no more the Cananite in the house of the Lord of hosts. (j.)

ANGELIC ORDINATIONS AND ORDINATIONS
AND APPOINTMENTS TO THE PRESIDENCY
OF THE CHURCH.

History of Joseph Smith, Times and Seasons. Aug. 1, 1842, pages 865, 866. We still continued the work of translation, when in the ensuing month, (May, eighteen hundred and twenty-nine,) we on a certain day went into the woods to pray

(j) H. v. 3, p. 157.

and inquire of the Lord respecting baptism for the remission of sins, as we found mentioned in the translation of the plates. While we were thus employed, praying and calling upon the Lord, a messenger from heaven descended in a cloud of light, and having laid his hands upon us, he ordained us, saying unto us, "upon you my fellow servants, in the name of Messiah, I confer the priesthood of Aaron, which holds the keys of the ministering of angels, and of the gospel of repentance, and of baptism by immersion, for the remission of sins, and this shall never be taken again from the earth, until the sons of Levi do offer again an offering to the Lord in righteousness." He said this Aaronic priesthood had not the power of laying on of hands, for the gift of the Holy Ghost, but this should be conferred on us hereafter, and he commanded us to go and be baptized, and gave us directions that I should baptize Oliver Cowdery, and afterwards that he should baptize me.

Accordingly, we went and were baptized, I baptized him first, and afterwards he baptized me, after which I laid my hands upon his head and ordained him to the Aaronic priesthood, and afterwards he laid

his hands on me; and ordained me to the the same priesthood, for so we were commanded.

The messenger who visited us on this occasion, and conferred this priesthood upon us, said that his name was *John*, the same that is called *John the Baptist*, in the New Testament, and that he acted under the *direction* of Peter, James, and John, who held the keys of the priesthood of Melchisedek, which priesthood he said should in due time be conferred on us—and that I should be called the first elder, and he the second. It was on the fifteenth day of May, eighteen hundred and twenty nine, that we were baptized and ordained under the hand of the messenger. (a)

Letter of Oliver Cowdery in the Times and Seasons, Nov. 1, 1840, p. 202. Dear brother, think further, think for a moment what joy filled our hearts, and with what surprise we must have bowed, (for who would not have bowed the knee for such a blessing?) when we received under his hand the holy priesthood, as he said: “upon you my fellow servants, in the name of Messiah I confer this priesthood and this

(a) H. v. 2, p. 95, 96.

authority, which shall remain upon earth, that the sons of Levi may yet offer an offering unto the Lord in righteousness." (b)

Hist. of J. Smith, T. & S. p. 915. We now became anxious to have that promise realized to us, which the angel that conferred upon us the *Aaronic priesthood* had given us, viz: that provided we continued faithful, *we should also have the Melchisedek priesthood*, which holds the authority of the laying on of hands for the gift of the Holy Ghost. We had for some time made this matter a subject of humble prayer, and at length we got together in the chamber of Mr. Whitmer's house, in order more particularly to seek of the Lord what we now so earnestly desired: and here to our unspeakable satisfaction did we realize the truth of the Savior's promise: "Ask and you shall receive, seek, and you shall find, knock and it shall be opened unto you;" for we had not long been engaged in solemn and fervent prayer, when the word of the Lord came unto us in the chamber, commanding us; that I should ordain Oliver Cowdery to be an elder in the church of Jesus Christ, and that he also should or-

(b) H. v. 2, p. 96.

ordain me to the same office, and then to ordain others as it should be made known unto us, from time to time: we were however commanded to *defer* this our ordination, until such times as it should be practicable to have our brethren, who had been and should be baptized, assembled together, when we *must* have their sanction to our thus proceeding to ordain each other, and have them decide by *vote* whether they were willing to accept us as spiritual teachers or not, when also we were commanded to bless bread and break it with them, and to take wine, bless it, and drink it with them, afterward proceed to ordain each other according to commandment. (c.)

Hist. of J. Smith, T. & S. p. 944, 945.
 Whilst the Book of Mormon was in the hands of the printer, we still continued to bear testimony, and give information, as far as we had opportunity; and also made known to our brethren, that we had received commandment to organize the church, and accordingly we met together for that purpose, at the house of the above mentioned Mr. Whitmer (being six in number) on Tuesday the sixth day of April, A. D., one thousand, eight hundred and thirty.

(c) H. v. 2, p. 169, 170.

B2

Having opened the meeting by solemn prayer to our heavenly Father we proceeded, (according to previous commandment) to call on our brethren to know whether they accepted us as their teachers in the things of the kingdom of God, and whether they were satisfied that we should proceed and be organized as a church, according to said commandment which we had received. To these they consented by an unanimous vote. I then laid my hands upon Oliver Cowdery, and ordained him an elder of the "Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints." After which he ordained me also to the office of an elder of said church. We then took bread, blessed it, and brake it with them, also wine, blessed it, and drank it with them. We then laid our hands on each individual member of the church present, that they might receive the gift of the Holy Ghost, and be *confirmed* members of the church of Christ. The Holy Ghost was poured out upon us to a very great degree. Some *prophesied*, whilst we all praised the Lord and rejoiced exceedingly. (d)

Hist. of J. Smith, T. & S. v. 5, p. 524.

(d) H. v. 2, p. 170.

On the 26th I called a general council of the church, and was acknowledged as the president *of the high priesthood*, according to a previous ordination at a conference of high priests, elders and members, held at Amherst, Ohio, on the 25th of January, 1832. The right hand of fellowship was given to me by the bishop, Edward Partridge, in behalf of the church. The scene was solemn, impressive, and delightful. (e.)

B. of C. xxvi. 3. Also with Peter, James and John, whom I have sent unto you, by whom I have ordained you and confirmed you to be apostles and especial witnesses of my name. (e.)

1 Chron. xxviii. 6. Solomon thy son, he shall build my house and my courts. (e.)

2 Chron. vi. 2. I (Solomon) have built an house of habitation for thee. (e.)

B. of C. xix. 3. It behoveth me that he (Joseph) should be ordained by you, Oliver Cowdery, mine apostle; this being an ordinance unto you, that you are an elder under his hand; he being the first unto you, that you might be an elder unto this church of Christ. [f]

(e) H. v. 2, .p 171. (f) H. v. 2, p. 172.

B. of C. xvii. 1. Which commandments were given to Joseph Smith, Jr., who was called of God and ordained an apostle of Jesus Christ, to be the first elder of this church; and to Oliver Cowdery, who was also called of God an apostle of Jesus Christ, to be the second elder of this church, and ordained under his hand.

B. of C. civ. 11. Of necessity there are presidents, or presiding offices, growing out of, or appointed of, or from among those who are ordained to the several offices in these two priesthoods. Of the Melchisedek priesthood, three presiding high priests, chosen by the body, appointed and ordained to that office, and upheld by the confidence, faith and prayer of the church, form a quorum of the presidency of the church. [f.]

B. of C. xvii. 17. EVERY president of the high priesthood, (or presiding elder) bishop, high counsellor and high priest, is to be ordained by the direction of a high council or general conference. [f.]

B. of C. xvii. 16. No person is to be ordained to ANY office in this church, where there is a regularly organized branch of the same, without the vote of that church. [f.]

(f) H. v. 2. p. 172.

B. of C. xxv. 1. All things must be done by common consent in the church. [g]

B. of C. xvii. 12. Every elder, priest, teacher or deacon, is to be ordained according to the gifts and callings of God unto him; and he is to be ordained by the power of the Holy Ghost, which is in the one who ordains him. [g]

B. of C. xxvii. 2. I have given him (Joseph) the keys of the mysteries and the revelations which are sealed, until I shall appoint unto them another in his stead. [h]

B. of C. xliii. 2. Verily, verily, I say unto you, that none else shall be appointed unto this gift except it be through him (Joseph.) [h]

B. of C. cvii. 18. This anointing have I put upon his head, that his blessing shall also be put upon the head of his posterity after him, and as I said unto Abraham concerning the kindreds of the earth, even so I say unto my servant Joseph, in thee, and in thy seed, shall the kindred of the earth be blessed. [i.]

Heb. vii. 7. Without all contradiction the less is blessed of the better. [i.]

B. of C. civ. 30. It is the duty of the

(g) H. v. 2, p. 173. (h) H. v. 1, p. 164. (i) H. v. 1, p. 165.

twelve also, to ordain and set in order all the other officers of the Church." [i.]

B. of C. civ. 3. The Melchisedek priesthood holds the right of presidency, and has power and authority over all the offices in the Church. [i.]

B. of C. xcix. 6. The President of the Church, who is also the President of the Council, is appointed by revelation, and acknowledged in his administration by the voice of the church. [j.]

Acts vii. 35. This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge? the same did God send to be a ruler and a deliverer by the hand of the angel which appeared to him in the bush. [j.]

See B. of C. xvii. 2, and xxvi. 2. 3. [j.]

APOSTACY FROM THE TRUE CHURCH AFTER THE DAYS OF CHRIST.

Isa. xxiv. 5. The earth also is defiled under the inhabitants thereof; because they have transgressed the laws, changed the ordinance, broken the everlasting covenant.

(i) H. v. 1, p. 165. (j) H. v. 1, p. 166.

6. Therefore hath the curse devoured the earth, and they that dwell therein are desolate: therefore the inhabitants of the earth are burned, and few men left.

Isa. xxix. 9. Stay yourselves, and wonder; cry ye out, and cry: they are drunken, but not with wine; they stagger, but not with strong drink.

10. For the Lord hath poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep, and hath closed your eyes: the prophets and your rulers, the seers hath he covered.

13. Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near me with their mouth, and with their lips do honor me, but have removed their heart far from me, and their fear toward me is taught by the precept of men:

14. Therefore, behold, I will proceed to do a marvelous work among this people, even a marvelous work and a wonder: for the wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid.

Acts xx. 28. Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost has made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

29. For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock.

30. Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.

+ Rom. xi. 22. Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

23. And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again.

24. For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree?

1 Tim. iv. 1. Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;

2. Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron;

3. Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving

For the mystery of iniquity is already at work
APOSTACY. *Mark 27*
2 Thess 2-7

of them which believe and know the truth.

2 Tim. iii. 1. This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come.

2. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,

3 Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good,

4: Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God ;

5. Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

2 Tim. iv. 1. I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom ;

2. Preach the word ; be instant in season, out of season ; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and doctrine.

3. For the time will come, when they will not endure sound doctrine ; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears ;

4. And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

1 John iv. 1. Beloved, believe not every

spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

2. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God:

3. And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God. And this is that spirit of anti-christ, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.

2 Peter iii. 1. This second epistle, beloved, I now write unto you; in both which I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance:

2. That ye may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Savior:

3. Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts,

4. And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

5. For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens

were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water :

6. Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished :

7. But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

Dan. vii. 19. Then I would know the truth of the fourth beast, which was diverse from all the others, exceeding dreadful, whose teeth were of iron, and his nails of brass; which devoured, brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with his feet;

20. And of the ten horns that were in his head, and of the other which came up, and before whom three fell; even of that horn that had eyes, and a mouth that spake very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows.

21. I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them;

22. Until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the Most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom.

25. And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out

the saints of the Most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.

+ Rev. xiii. 1. And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy.

2. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.

3. And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast.

4. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him?

5. And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months.

6. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name,

and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

7. And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

8. And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

9. If any man have an ear, let him hear.

10. He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

The foregoing quotation shows the prevalence of iniquity, and the remainder of the chapter also shows it.

Rev. xix. 17. And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come, and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God;

18. That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of

all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

19. And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

20. And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21. And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

335 Rev. xiv. 6. And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,

7. Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

8. And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that

great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

9. And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand.

10. The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb.

11. And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

See Rev. ii., iii., and xvii.

Dan. viii. 8. Therefore the he-goat waxed very great: and when he was strong, the great horn was broken; and for it, came up four notable ones toward the four winds of heaven.

9. And out of one of them came forth a little horn, which waxed exceeding great, toward the south, and toward the east, and toward the pleasant land.

10. And it waxed great, even to the

host of heaven; and it cast down some of the host and of the stars to the ground, and stamped upon them.

11. Yea, he magnified himself even to the prince of the host, and by him the daily sacrifice was taken away, and the place of his sanctuary was cast down.

12. And a host was given him against the daily sacrifice by reason of transgression, and it cast down the truth to the ground; and it practised, and prospered.

13. Then I heard one saint speaking, and another saint said unto that certain saint which spake, How long shall be the vision concerning the daily sacrifice, and the transgression of desolation, to give both the sanctuary and the host to be trodden under foot?

14. And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed.

Dan. viii. 23. And in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king of fierce countenance, and understanding dark sentences, shall stand up.

24. And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and

practise, and shall destroy the mighty and the holy people.

25. And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he shall magnify himself in his heart, and by peace shall destroy many: he shall also stand up against the Prince of princes; but he shall be broken without hand.

Dan. xi. 31. And arms shall stand on his part, and they shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and shall take away the daily sacrifice, and they shall place the abomination that maketh desolate.

32. And such as do wickedly against the covenant shall he corrupt by flatteries; but the people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits.

33. And they that understand among the people shall instruct many: yet they shall fall by the sword, and by flame, by captivity, and by spoil, many days.

See 1 Nephi 3: 40; Nephi 7: 2; 2 Nephi 12: 1; 1 Nephi 3: 44, 51; 2 Nephi 11: 13-16; 2 Nephi 12: 1, 3; Mormon 1: 2, 6; B. C. 83: (4) 4; B. C. 32: (55) 1.

BIRTHRIGHT AND BLESSINGS OF THE TRIBE OF JOSEPH.

1 Chron. v. 1. Now the sons of Reuben, the first-born of Israel, (for he was the first-born: but, forasmuch as he defiled his father's bed, his birthright was given unto the sons of Joseph the son of Israel: and the genealogy is not to be reckoned after the birthright.

2. For Judah prevailed above his brethren, and of him came the chief ruler; but the birthright was Joseph's.) (a)

See Gen. 31: 1-13, 41, 42. (b)

Ex. xxii. 29. Thou shalt not delay to offer the first of thy ripe fruits, and of thy liquors: the first-born of thy sons shalt thou give unto me. (c)

2 Chron. xxi. 3. And their father gave them great gifts of silver, and of gold, and of precious things, with fenced cities in Judah: but the kingdom gave he to Jehoram; because he was the first-born. (d.)

Gen. xxv. 31. And Jacob said, Sell me this day thy birthright.

(a) H. v. 2, p. 97. (b) H. v. 1, p. 157. (c) H. v. 2, p. 97.

(d) H. v. 2, p. 98.

32. And Esau said, Behold, I am at the point to die: and what profit shall this birthright do to me?

33. And Jacob said, Swear to me this day; and he swear unto him: and he sold his birthright unto Jacob.

34. Then Jacob gave Esau bread and pottage of lentiles; and he did eat and drink, and rose up, and went his way: thus Esau despised his birthright. (e)

Num. iii. 13. Because all the first-born are mine; for on the day that I smote all the first-born in the land of Egypt, I hallowed unto me all the first-born in Israel, both men and beast: mine they shall be: I am the Lord.

The *Union Bible Dictionary* says: The first-born son among the Jews enjoyed special privileges above his brethren, and these privileges were hence called his birthright or his right by birth. Among these privileges (or right by birth,) were consecration to the Lord, (Ex. 22: 29;) great dignity, (Gen. 49: 3;) a double portion of his father's estate, (Deut. 21: 17;) and (in the royal families) succession to the kingdom (2 Chron. 21: 3). The paternal bles-

(e) H. v. 2, p. 97, 98.

ing was also in a very peculiar sense the right of the first-born, though the right itself and all the blessings of it might be forfeited or transferred, as in the case of Jacob and Esau, (Gen. 25 : 33,) Reuben and Joseph (1 Chron. 5 : 1). But whoever enjoyed it was regarded with great dignity and superiority." (e)

Gen. xliii : 33. And they sat before him, the first-born according to his birthright, and the youngest according to his youth : and the men marvelled one at another.

Gen. xlviii. 1. And it came to pass after these things, that one told Joseph, Behold, thy father is sick : and he took with him his two sons, Manasseh and Ephraim.

2. And one told Jacob, and said, Behold, thy son Joseph cometh unto thee : and Israel strengthened himself, and sat upon the bed.

3. And Jacob said unto Joseph, God Almighty appeared unto me at Luz in the land of Canaan, and blessed me,

4. And said unto me, Behold, I will make thee fruitful, and multiply thee, and I will make of thee a multitude of people ; and will give this land to thy seed after thee, for an everlasting possession.

(e) H. v. 2, p. 97, 98.

5. And now, thy two sons, Ephraim and Manasseh, which were born unto thee in the land of Egypt, before I came unto thee into Egypt, are mine: as Reuben and Simeon, they shall be mine.

6. And thy issue, which thou begettest after them, shall be thine, and shall be called after the name of their brethren in their inheritance.

13. And Joseph took them both, Ephraim in his right hand toward Israel's left hand, and Manasseh in his left hand toward Israel's right hand, and brought them near unto him.

14. And Israel stretched out his right hand, and laid it upon Ephraim's head, who was the younger, and his left hand upon Manasseh's head, guiding his hands wittingly; for Manasseh was the first-born.

15. And he blessed Joseph, and said, God, before whom my fathers Abraham and Isaac did walk, the God which fed me all my life long unto this day,

16. The Angel which redeemed me from all evil, bless the lads; and let my name be named on them, and the name of my fathers Abraham and Isaac: and let them grow into a multitude in the midst of the earth.

17. And when Joseph saw that his father laid his right hand upon the head of Ephraim, it displeased him: and he held up his father's hand, to remove it from Ephraim's head unto Manasseh's head.

18. And Joseph said unto his father, Not so, my father: for this is the first-born; put thy right hand upon his head.

19. And his father refused, and said, I know it, my son, I know it: he also shall become a people, and he also shall be great: but truly his younger brother shall be greater than he, and his seed shall become a multitude of nations.

20. And he blessed them that day, saying, In thee shall Israel bless, saying, God make thee as Ephraim and as Manasseh: and he set Ephraim before Manasseh. (f)

Gen. xlix. 1. And Jacob called unto his sons, and said, Gather yourselves together, that I may tell you that which shall befall you in the last days.

3. Reuben, thou art my first-born, my might, and the beginning of my strength, the excellency of dignity, and the excellency of power.

4. Unstable as water, thou shalt not ex-

(f) H. v. 2, p. 98-100,

cel ; because thou wentest up to thy father's bed ; then defiledst thou it ; he went up to my couch.

22. Joseph is a fruitful bough, even a fruitful bough by a well, whose branches run over the wall :

23. The archers have sorely grieved him, and shot at him, and hated him :

24. But his bow abode in strength, and the arms of his hands were made strong by the hands of the mighty God of Jacob : (from thence is the shepherd, the stone of Israel :)

25. Even by the God of thy father, who shall help thee, and by the Almighty, who shall bless thee with blessings of heaven above, blessings of the deep that lieth under, blessings of the breasts and of the womb :

26. The blessings of thy father have prevailed above the blessings of my progenitors, unto the utmost bound of the everlasting hills ; they shall be on the head of Joseph, and on the crown of the head of him that was separate from his brethren.

28. All these are the twelve tribes of Israel : and this is it that their father spake unto them, and blessed them : every one according to his blessing he blessed them. (g)

(g) H. v. 2, p. 99,-102,

Gen. xvii. 8. And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God. (h)

Gen. xxvi. 3. Sojourn in this land, and I will be with thee, and I will bless thee: for unto thee, and unto thy seed I will give all these countries; and I will perform the oath which I sware unto Abraham thy father;

4. And I will make thy seed to multiply as the stars of heaven, and will give unto thy seed all these countries: and in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed. (h)

Gen. xviii. 18. Seeing that Abraham shall surely become a great and mighty nation, and all the nations of the earth shall be blessed in him. (h)

Hos. xi. 8. How shall I give thee up, Ephraim? how shall I deliver thee, Israel? how shall I make thee as Admah? how shall I set thee as Zeboim? mine heart is turned within me, my repentings are kindled together.

9. I will not execute the fierceness of

(h) H. v. 2, p. 102.

mine anger, I will not return to destroy Ephraim: for I am God, and not man; the Holy One in the midst of thee: and I will not enter into the city.

10. They shall walk after the Lord: he shall roar like a lion: when he shall roar, then the children shall tremble from the west. (h)

Hos. ix. 13. Ephraim, as I saw Tyrus, is planted in a pleasant place: but Ephraim shall bring forth his children to the murderer. (i)

Deut. xxxiii. 1. And this is the blessing wherewith Moses the man of God blessed the children of Israel before his death.

13. And of Joseph he said, Blessed of the Lord be his land, for the precious things of heaven, for the dew, and for the deep that coucheth beneath,

14. And for the precious fruits brought forth by the sun, and for the precious things put forth by the moon,

15. And for the chief things of the ancient mountains, and for the precious things of the lasting hills,

16. And for the precious things of the earth and fulness thereof, and for the good

(h) H. v. 2, p. 102.

(i) H. v. 2, p. 102.

will of him that dwelt in the bush : let the blessing come upon the head of Joseph, and upon the top of the head of him that was separated from his brethren.

17. His glory is like the firstling of his bullock, and his horns are like the horns of unicorns : with them he shall push the people together to the ends of the earth : and they are the ten thousands of Ephraim, and they are the thousands of Manasseh. (j)

Num. viii. 17. For all the first-born of the children of Israel are mine, both man and beast : on the day that I smote every first-born in the land of Egypt I sanctified them for myself. (j)

Jer. xxxi. 6. For there shall be a day, that the watchmen upon the mount Eph-taim shall cry, Arise ye, and let us go up ro Zion unto the Lord our God.

7. For thus saith the Lord ; Sing with gladness for Jacob, and shout among the chief of the nations : publish ye, praise ye, and say, O Lord, save thy people, the remnant of Israel.

8. Behold, I will bring them from the north country, and gather them from the coasts of the earth, and with them the blind

(j) H. v. 2. p. 104.

and the lame, the woman with child and her that travaileth with child together: a great company shall return thither.

9. They shall come with weeping, and with supplications will I lead them; I will cause them to walk by the rivers of waters in a straight way, wherein they shall not stumble: for I am a father to Israel, and Ephraim is my first-born. (k)

Ps. lxxxix. 27. Also will I make him my first-born, higher than the kings of the earth.

Col. i. 18. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the first-born from the dead: that in all things he might have the pre-eminence.

Rom. viii. 29. For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among many brethren.

Heb. i. 2. Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds;

4. Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.

(k) H. v. 2, p. 105.

6. And again, when he bringeth in the first-begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.

Ex. iv. 22. And thou shalt say unto Pharaoh, Thus saith the Lord, Israel is my son, even my first-born.

Ex. xii. 29. And it came to pass, that at midnight the Lord smote all the first-born in the land of Egypt, from the first-born of Pharaoh that sat on his throne, unto the first-born of the captive that was in the dungeon; and all the first-born of cattle.

Ps. lx. 7. Gilead is mine, and Manasseh is mine; Ephraim also is the strength of mine head; Judah is my lawgiver.

BOOK OF MORMON.

Isa. xxix. 9. Stay yourselves, and wonder; cry ye out, and cry: they are drunken, but not with wine; they stagger, but not with strong drink.

10. For the Lord hath poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep, and hath closed your eyes; the prophets and your rulers, the seers hath he covered.

11. And the vision of all is become unto you as the words of a book that is sealed,

which men deliver to one that is learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I can not; for it is sealed:

12. And the book is delivered to him that is not learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I am not learned.

13. Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near me with their mouth, and with their lips do honor me, but have removed their heart far from me, and their fear toward me is taught by the precept of men:

14. Therefore behold, I will proceed to do a marvelous work among this people, even a marvelous work and a wonder: for the wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid.

15. Wo unto them that seek deep to hide their counsel from the Lord, and their works are in the dark, and they say, Who seeth us? and who knoweth us?

16. Surely your turning of things upside down shall be esteemed as the potter's clay: for shall the work say of him that made it, He made me not? or shall the thing framed say of him that framed it, He had no understanding?

17. Is it not yet a very little while, and

Lebanon shall be turned into a fruitful field, and the fruitful field shall be esteemed as a forest?

18. And in that day shall the deaf hear the words of the book, and the eyes of the blind shall see out of obscurity, and out of darkness.

19. The meek also shall increase their joy in the Lord, and the poor among men shall rejoice in the Holy One of Israel.

20. For the terrible one is brought to nought, and the scorner is consumed, and all that watch for iniquity are cut off:

21. That make a man an offender for a word, and lay a snare for him that reproveth in the gate, and turn aside the just for a thing of nought.

22. Therefore thus saith the Lord, who redeemed Abraham, concerning the house of Jacob, Jacob shall not now be ashamed, neither shall his face now wax pale.

23. But when he seeth his children, the work of mine hands, in the midst of him, they shall sanctify my name, and sanctify the Holy One of Jacob, and shall fear the God of Israel.

24. They also that erred in spirit shall come to understanding, and they that murmured shall learn doctrine. (a)

(a) H. v. 1, p. 29-36.

1 Sam. xxviii. 15. And Samuel said to Saul, Why hast thou disquieted me, to bring me up? And Saul answered, I am sore distressed; for the Philistines make war against me, and God is departed from me, and answereth me no more, neither by prophets, nor by dreams: therefore I have called thee, that thou mayest make known unto me what I shall do. (b)

John xv. 7. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. (b)

Testimony of Martin Harris concerning "the words of a book" being taken to a "learned" man, in February, 1828, copied from the History of Joseph Smith, in the *Times and Seasons*, v. 3, p. 773: "Sometime in the month of February, the aforementioned Martin Harris came to our place, got the characters which I had drawn off, and started with them to the city of New York. For what took place relative to him and the characters, I refer to his own account of the circumstances, as he related them to me after his return, which was as follows: 'I went to the city of New York, and presented the charac-

(b) H. v. 1, p. 30.

D

ters which had been translated, with the translation thereof, to Professor Anthon, a gentleman celebrated for his literary attainments. Professor Anthon stated that the translation was correct, more so than any he had before seen translated from the Egyptian. I then showed him those which were not yet translated, and he said that they were Egyptian, Chaldaic, Assyriac and Arabic, and he said that they were the true characters. He gave me a certificate, certifying to the people of Palmyra that they were the true characters, and that the translation of such of them as had been translated was also correct. I took the certificate and put it into my pocket, and was just leaving the house, when Mr. Anthon called me back, and asked me how the young man found out that there were gold plates in the place where he found them? I answered that an angel of God had revealed it unto him. He then said unto me, 'let me see that certificate.' I accordingly took it out of my pocket and gave it to him, when he took it and tore it to pieces, saying that there was no such thing now as ministering of angels, and that if I would bring the plates to him he would translate them. I informed him that

part of the plates were sealed, and that I was forbidden to bring them. He replied, 'I cannot read a sealed book.' I left him and went to Dr. Mitchell, who sanctioned what Professor Anthon had said respecting both the characters and the translation.' " (c)

1 Cor. i. 19. For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent.

20. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?

27. But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty;

28. And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are:

29. That no flesh should glory in his presence. (d)

Eph. ii. 2. Wherein in time past ye

(c) H. v. 1, p. 33. (d) H. v. 1, p. 34.

walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience. (e)

Eph. iv. 11. And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;

12. For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

13. Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ:

14. That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive. (f)

Isa. xxiv. 5. The earth also is defiled under the inhabitants thereof; because they have transgressed the laws, changed the ordinance, broken the everlasting covenant. (f)

1 Cor. iii. 19. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness. (f)

(e) H. v. 2, p. 36.

(f) H. v. 4, p. 83.

Isa. xxviii. 21. For the Lord shall rise up as in mount Perazim, he shall be wroth as in the valley of Gibeon, that he may do his work, his strange work; and bring to pass his act, his strange act.

22. Now therefore be ye not mockers, lest your bands be made strong: for I have heard from the Lord God of hosts a consumption, even determined upon the whole earth. (See Context.) (f)

Josh. x. 10. And the Lord discomfited them before Israel, and slew them with a great slaughter at Gibeon, and chased them along the way that goeth up to Beth-horon, and smote them to Azekah, and unto Makedah.

11. And it came to pass as they fled from before Israel, and were in the going down to Beth-horon, that the Lord cast down great stones from heaven upon them unto Azekah, and they died: they were more which died with hailstones than they whom the children of Israel slew with the sword.

12. Then spake Joshua to the Lord in the day when the Lord delivered up the Amorites before the children of Israel, and

(f) H. v. 4, p. 83.

he said in the sight of Israel, Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon, and thou Moon, in the valley of Ajalon. (g)

Zech. xiv. 3. Then shall the Lord go forth, and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the day of battle. (h)

See Ezek. 38: 22; Ezek. 13: 11, 13; Isa. 30: 30; Ps. 18: 12; Rev. 16: 21; Rev. 8: 7; Rev. 11: 19; Job. 38: 22. (h)

Isa. v. 18. Wo unto them that draw iniquity with cords of vanity, and sin as it were with a cart rope:

19. That say, Let him make speed, and hasten his work, that we may see it: and let the counsel of the Holy One of Israel draw nigh and come, that we may know it! (h)

Isa. xl. 9. O Zion, that bringest good tidings, get thee up into the high mountain: O Jerusalem, that bringest good tidings, lift up thy voice with strength; lift it up, be not afraid; say unto the cities of Judah, Behold your God!

10. Behold the Lord God will come with strong hand; and his arm shall rule for him: behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him. (h)

(g) H. v. 4, p. 83, 84. (h) H. v. 4, p. 84.

Rom. ix. 27. Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved:

28. For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.

29 And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodoma, and been made like unto Gomorrah. (i)

Isa. xxxiv. 8. For it is the day of the Lord's vengeance, and the year of recompenses for the controversy of Zion. (j)

Ps. xxxiv. 21. Evil shall slay the wicked: and they that hate the righteous shall be desolate. (j)

Ps. xxxvii. 34. Wait on the Lord, and keep His way, and he shall exalt thee to inherit the land: when the wicked are cut off, thou shalt see it.

35. I have seen the wicked in great power, and spreading himself like a green bay-tree.

36. Yet he passed away, and lo, he was not; yea, I sought him, but he could not be found. (j)

(i) II. v. 4, p. 85.

(j) II. v. 4, p. 99.

Ezek. xx. 23. I lifted up mine hand unto them also in the wilderness, that I would scatter them among the heathen, and disperse them through the countries ;

24. Because they had not executed my judgments, but had despised my statutes, and had polluted my sabbaths, and their eyes were after their fathers' idols.

40. For in mine holy mountain, in the mountain of the height of Israel, saith the Lord God, there shall all the house of Israel, all of them in the land, serve me : there will I accept them, and there will I require your offerings, and the first-fruits of your oblations, with all your holy things.

41. I will accept you with your sweet savour, when I bring you out from the people, and gather you out of the countries wherein ye have been scattered ; and I will be sanctified in you before the heathen.

42. And ye shall know that I am the Lord, when I shall bring you into the land of Israel, into the country for the which I lifted up mine hand to give it to your fathers. (j)

Jer. xxxii. 37. Behold, I will gather them out of all countries, whither I have driven

(j) H. v. 4, p. 95.

them in mine anger, and in my fury, and in great wrath; and I will bring them again unto this place, and I will cause them to dwell safely:

38. And they shall be my people and I will be their God:

39. And I will give them one heart and one way, that they may fear me for ever, for the good of them, and of their children after them:

40. And I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them, to do them good; but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me.

41. Yea, I will rejoice over them to do them good, and I will plant them in this land assuredly with my whole heart and with my whole soul. (k)

See Jer. ix. 23, 24; John vii. 17. (l)

Ezek. xxxvii. 15. The word of the Lord came again unto me, saying,

16. Moreover, thou son of man, take thee one stick, and write upon it, For Judah, and for the children of Israel his companions: then take another stick, and write upon it, For Joseph, the stick of Ephraim,

(k) H. v. 4. p. 99, 100.

(l) H. v. 4, p. 100.

and for all the house of Israel his companions :

17. And join them one to another into one stick ; and they shall become one in thine hand.

18. And when the children of thy people shall speak unto thee, saying, Wilt thou not show us what thou meanest by these ?

19. Say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God ; Behold, I will take the stick of Joseph, which is in the hand of Ephraim, and the tribes of Israel his fellows, and will put them with him, even with the stick of Judah, and make them one stick, and they shall be one in mine hand.

20. And the sticks whereon thou writest shall be in thine hand before their eyes.

21. And say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God ; Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen, whither they be gone, and will gather them on every side, and bring them into their own land :

22. And I will make them one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel ; and one king shall be king to them all : and they shall be no more two nations, neither shall they be divided into two kingdoms any more at all :

23. Neither shall they defile themselves any more with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions: but I will save them out of all their dwelling-places, wherein they have sinned, and will cleanse them: so shall they be my people, and I will be their God. (m)

Ezra vi. 1. Then Darius the king made a decree, and search was made in the house of the rolls, where the treasures were laid up in Babylon.

2. And there was found at Achmetha, in the palace that is in the province of the Medes, a roll, and therein was a record thus written. [m]

Isa. viii. 1. Moreover, the Lord said unto me, Take thee a great roll, and write in it with a man's pen concerning Maher-shalal-hash-baz. [m]

Jer. xxxvi. 2. Take thee a roll of a book, and write therein all the words that I have spoken unto thee against Israel, and against Judah, and against all the nations, from the day I spake unto thee, from the days of Josiah, even unto this day. [m]

1 Kings xii. 19. So Israel rebelled

(m) H. v. 4, p. 153.

against the house of David unto this day.

20. And it came to pass when all Israel heard that Jeroboam was come again, that they sent and called him unto the congregation, and made him king over all Israel: there was none that followed the house of David, but the tribe of Judah only. [n]

2 Kings xviii. 11. And the king of Assyria did carry away Israel unto Assyria, and put them in Halah and in Habor by the river Gozan, and in the citys of the Medes :

12. Because they obeyed not the voice of the Lord their God, but transgressed his covenant, and all that Moses the servant of the Lord commanded, and would not hear them, nor do them. [n]

2 Esdras xiii. 41. But they took this counsel among themselves, that they would leave the multitude of the heathen, and go forth into a further country, where never mankind dwelt,

42. That they might there keep their statutes, which they never kept in their own land.

43. And they entered into Euphrates by the narrow passages of the river.

(n) H. v. 4, p. 154.

44. For the Most High then shewed signs for them, and held still the flood, till they were passed over.

45. For through that country there was a great way to go, namely, of a year and a half; and the same region is called Arsareth.

46. Then dwelt they there until the latter time; and now when they shall begin to come,

47. The Highest shall stay the springs of the stream again, that they may go through: therefore sawest thou the multitude with peace. [n]

Jer. xvi. 14. Therefore behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that it shall no more be said, The Lord liveth, that brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt;

15. But, the Lord liveth, that brought up the children of Israel from the land of the north, and from all the lands whither he had driven them: and I will bring them again into their land that I gave unto their fathers.

16. Behold, I will send for many fishers, saith the Lord, and they shall fish them;

(n) H. v. 4, p. 154.

and after will I send for many hunters, and they shall hunt them from every mountain, and from every hill, and out of the holes of the rocks. [n]

See Hos. xi. 9, 10 in this book, p. 42. [o]

Hos. viii. 11. Because Ephraim hath made many altars to sin, altars shall be unto him to sin.

12. I have written to him the great things of my law, but they were counted as a strange thing. [p]

See Ps. lx. 7, in this book, p. 46. [p]

Hos. i. 11. Then shall the children of Judah and the children of Israel be gathered together, and appoint themselves one head, and they shall come up out of the land: for great shall be the day of Jezreel. [p]

Hos. vii. 8. Ephraim, he hath mixed himself among the people; Ephraim is a cake not turned.

Ps. lxxx. 1. Give ear, O Shepherd of Israel, thou that leadest Joseph like a flock; thou that dwellest between the cherubims, shine forth.

2. Before Ephraim and Benjamin and Manasseh stir up thy strength, and come and save us. [p]

(n) H. v. 4, p. 154. (o) H. v. 4. p. 155.

(p) H. v. 4, p. 156.

See Jer. xxxi. 8, 9, 20 in this b. p. 44. [q]

See Gen. xlix. 22-26 in this b. p. 41. [r]

Isa. xxviii. 3. The crown of pride, the drunkards of Ephraim, shall be trodden under feet. [s]

Heb. vii. 14. For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Judah ; of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood. [s]

See Mat. i. 1-17 ; Gen. xlix. 10. [s]

Gen. xv. 18. In that same day the Lord made a covenant with Abram, saying, Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates:

19. The Kenites, and the Kenizzites, and the Kadmonites,

20. And the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Rephaims,

21. And the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Girgashites, and the Jebusites.

Gen. xvii. 7. And I will establish my covenant between me and thee, and thy seed after thee, in their generations, for an everlasting covenant; to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee.

(q) H. v. 4. p. 157. (r.) H. v. 4, p. 168, 169.

(s) H. v. 4, p. 160.

8. And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.

See Gen. xxvi. 3, 4, in this book, p. 42.

Gen. xxviii. 3. And God Almighty bless thee, and make thee fruitful, and multiply thee, that thou mayest be a multitude of people;

4. And give thee the blessing of Abraham, to thee, and to thy seed with thee; that thou mayest inherit the land wherein thou art a stranger, which God gave unto Abraham.

See Deut. xxxiii. 1, 13-17 in this book, p. 43. [t]

1 Sam. iii. 1. And the child Samuel ministered unto the Lord before Eli. And the word of the Lord was precious in those days; there was no open vision. [t]

Ex. xiii. 12. That thou shalt set apart unto the Lord all that openeth the matrix; and every firstling that cometh of a beast which thou hast, the males shall be the Lord's. [u]

Ps. lxxxv. 8. I will hear what God the

(t) H. v. 5, p. 71. (u) H. v. 5, p. 72.

Lord will speak : for he will speak peace unto his people, and to his saints : but let them not turn again to folly.

9. Surely his salvation is nigh them that fear him ; that glory may dwell in our land.

10. Mercy and truth are met together ; righteousness and peace have kissed each other.

11. Truth shall spring out of the earth ; and righteousness shall look down from heaven.

12. Yea, the Lord shall give that which is good ; and our land shall yield her increase.

13. Righteousness shall go before him ; and shall set us in the way of his steps. [v.]

Compare Ps. lxxxv. 9-12 with Isa. xxix. 17, and Ezek. xxxvii. 21, 22. Compare Ps. lxxxv. 8, 10, 11, 13, with Isa. xxix. 18-20, 22, 24, and Ezek. xxxvii. 23-25. (v.) Compare Hos. viii. 12 with Isa. xxix. 13, 14.

2 Nephi xii. 1. "There shall be many which shall teach after this manner, false, and vain, and foolish doctrines, and shall be puffed up in their hearts, and shall seek deep to hide their counsels from the Lord : and their works shall be in the dark ; *and*

(v) H. v. 5, p. 73.

IE

the blood of the saints shall cry from the ground against them. Yea, they have all gone out of the way: they have become corrupted. Because of pride, and because of false teachers and false doctrine, their churches have become corrupted; and their churches are lifted up; because of pride they are puffed up. They rob the poor, because of their fine sanctuaries; they rob the poor because of their fine clothing; and they persecute the meek and the poor in heart, because in their pride they are puffed up. (w)

B. of Mormon in B. of M. iv. 1. It (the B. of Mormon) shall come in a day when the blood of saints shall cry unto the Lord, because of secret combinations and the works of darkness; yea, it shall come in a day when the power of God shall be denied, and churches become defiled, and shall be lifted up in the pride of their hearts; yea, even in a day when leaders of churches, and teachers, in the pride of their hearts, even to the envying of them who belong to their churches; yea it shall come in a day when there shall be heard of fires, and tempests, and vapors of smoke in foreign

(w) H v. 2, p. 258.

lands; and there shall also be heard of wars, and earthquakes in divers places; yea, it shall come in a day when there shall be great pollutions upon the face of the earth; there shall be murders, and robbing and lying and deceivings, and whoredoms, and all manner of abominations. (x)

See B. of Ether iii. last par. (y)

B. of Alma xvii. 8. Thus the judgments of God did come upon those workers of darkness and secret combinations; yea, and cursed be the land forever and ever unto those workers of darkness and secret combinations, even unto destruction, except they repent before they are fully ripe.

1 Nephi vii. 1. The blood of that great and abominable church, which is the whore of all the earth, shall turn upon their own heads, for they shall war among themselves, and the sword of their own hands shall fall upon their own heads, and they shall be drunken with their own blood. And every nation which shall war against thee, O house of Israel, shall be turned one against another, and they shall fall into the pit which they digged to ensnare the people of the Lord. And all that fight against

(x) H. v. 2, p. 258, 259. (y) H v. 2, p. 260, 261.

Zion shall be destroyed. And that great whore, who hath perverted the right ways of the Lord; yea, that great and abominable church shall tumble to the dust, and great shall be the fall of it. (z)

2 Nephi xii. 13. The Lord God shall commence his work, among all nations, kindreds, tongues and people, to bring about the restoration of his people upon the earth. And with righteousness shall the Lord God judge the poor, and reprove with equity, for the meek of the earth. And he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth; and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked; for the time speedily cometh, that the Lord God shall cause *a great division among the people*; and the wicked will he destroy; and he will spare his people, yea, even if it so be that he must destroy the wicked by fire. (a)

(B. of Ether i. 3. Now we can behold the decrees of God concerning this land, that it is a land of promise, and whatsoever nation shall possess it, shall serve God, or they shall be swept off when the fullness of his wrath shall come upon them. And the fullness of his wrath cometh upon

(z) H. v. 2, 261, 262. (a) H. v. 2, p. 262.*

them when they are ripened in iniquity; for behold, this is a land which is choice above all other lands; wherefore he that doth possess it shall serve God, or shall be swept off; for it is the everlasting decree of God. And it is not until the fullness of iniquity among the children of the land, that they are swept off. And this cometh unto you, O ye Gentiles, that ye may know the decrees of God, that ye may repent, and not continue in your iniquities until the fullness come, that ye may not bring down the fullness of the wrath of God upon you, as the inhabitants of the land hath hitherto done. Behold, this is a choice land, and whatsoever nation shall possess it, shall be free from bondage, and from captivity, and from all other nations under heaven, if they will but serve the God of the land, who is Jesus Christ, who hath been manifested by the things which we have written. (b)

B. of Nephi ix. 8. When they (the Gentiles on this land) shall have received the fullness of my gospel, then if they shall harden their hearts against me, I will return their iniquities upon their own heads, saith

(b) H. v. 2, p. 262, 263.

E3

the Father. And I will remember the covenant which I have made with my people, and I have covenanted with them, that I would gather them together in mine own due time; that I would give unto them again the land of their fathers, for their inheritance, which is the land of Jerusalem, which is the promised land unto them forever, saith the Father. (c)

2 Nephi xii. 9. It shall come to pass that the Jews shall have the words of the Nephites, and the Nephites shall have the words of the Jews. * * And it shall come to pass that my people which are of the house of Israel, shall be gathered home unto the lands of their possessions; and my word also shall be gathered in one. And I will shew unto them that fight against my word and against my people, who are of the house of Israel, that I am God, and that I covenanted with Abraham, that I would remember his seed forever. (d)

Apocryphal B. of Enoch. But now I swear to you, ye righteous, by the greatness of his splendor and his glory; by his illustrious kingdom, and by his majesty, to

(c) H. v. 2, p. 265.

(d) H. v. 2, p. 266.

you I swear that I comprehend this mystery: that I have read the tablet of heaven, have seen the writing of the holy ones, and have discovered what is written and impressed on it concerning you.

* * * * *

We have perished; nor has there been a possibility of help for us in word or in deed: we have found none, but have been tormented and destroyed.

We have not expected to live day after day.

We hoped indeed to have been the head; but we have become the tail. We have been afflicted, when we have exerted ourselves; but we have been devoured by sinners and the ungodly; their yoke has been heavy upon us.

Those have exercised dominion over us who detest and who goad us; and to those who hate us we have humbled our neck; but they have shown no compassion toward us.

We have been desirous of escaping from them, that we might fly away and be at rest; but we have found no place to which we could fly, and be secure from them. We have sought an asylum with princes in our distress, and have cried out to those

who were devouring us; but our cry had not been regarded, nor have they been disposed to hear our voice;

But rather to assist those who would plunder and devour us; those who diminish us, and hide their oppression; who remove not their yoke from us, but devour, enervate, and slay us; who conceal our slaughter, nor remember that they have lifted up their hands against us.

I swear to you, ye righteous, that in heaven the angels record your goodness before the glory of the Mighty One. Wait with patient hope; for formerly you have been disgraced with exile and affliction; but now shall you shine like the luminaries of heaven. You shall be seen, and the gates of heaven shall be open to you. Your cries have cried for judgment; and it has appeared to you: for an account of all your suffering shall be required from the princes, and from every one who has assisted your plunderers. Wait with patient hope; nor relinquish your confidence; for great joy shall be yours, like unto that of the angels in heaven. Conduct yourselves as you may, still you shall not be concealed in the day of the great judgment. You shall not be found like sinners; and eter-

nal condemnation shall be far from you, as long as the world exists.

And now fear not, ye righteous, when you see sinners flourishing and prosperous in their ways. Be not associates with them, but keep yourselves at a distance from their oppression; be you associated with the host of heaven. You, ye sinners say, all our transgressions shall not be taken account of, and be recorded; but all your transgressions shall be recorded daily.

And be assured by me, that light and darkness, day and night, behold all your transgressions. Be not impious in your thoughts; lie not; surrender not the word of uprightness; lie not against the word of the Holy and the Mighty one; glorify not your idols; for all your lying and all your impiety is not for righteousness, but for great crime.

Now will I point out a mystery; many sinners shall turn and transgress against the word of uprightness.

They shall speak evil things; they shall utter falsehood; execute great undertakings; and compose books in their own words. But when they shall write all my words correctly in their own languages, they shall neither change nor diminish

them; but shall write them all correctly; all which from the first I have uttered concerning them.

Another mystery also I point out.

To the righteous and the wise shall be given books of joy, of integrity, of great wisdom. To them shall books be given, in which they shall believe, and in which they shall rejoice. And all the righteous shall be rewarded, who from these shall acquire the knowledge of every upright path.

In those days, saith the Lord, they shall call to the children of the earth, and make them listen to their wisdom. Shew them that you are their leaders; and that remuneration *shall take place* over the whole earth; for I and my Son will for ever hold communion with them in the paths of uprightness, while they are still alive. Peace shall be yours. Rejoice, children of integrity, in the truth. (e)

See Ancient Records—Egyptian Mummies. (f)

The following quotations show that God commanded sacred things to be hid in places of safety, as the Book of Mormon was hid:

(e) H. v. 2, p. 285, 286. (f) v. 3, p. 37, -42 & v. 4, p. 60-63.

Ex. xxv. 16. And thou shalt put into the ark the testimony which I shall give thee.

Deut. x. 5. And I turned myself, and came down from the mount, and put the tables in the ark which I had made; and there they be, as the Lord commanded me.

6. And the children of Israel took their journey from Beeroth of the children of Jaakan to Mosera: there Aaron died, and there he was buried; and Eleazar his son ministered in the priest's office in his stead.

7. From thence they journeyed unto Gudgodah; and from Gudgodah to Jotbath, a land of rivers of waters.

8. At that time the Lord separated the tribe of Levi, to bear the ark of the covenant of the Lord, to stand before the Lord to minister unto him, and to bless in his name, unto this day.

Josh. iii. 8. And thou shalt command the priests that bear the ark of the covenant, saying, When ye are come to the brink of the water of Jordan, ye shall stand still in Jordan.

13. And it shall come to pass, as soon as the soles of the feet of the priests that bear the ark of the Lord, the Lord of all the earth, shall rest in the waters of Jordan, that the waters of Jordan shall be cut

off from the waters that come down from above; and they shall stand upon a heap.

14. And it came to pass, when the people removed from their tents, to pass over Jordan, and the priests bearing the ark of the covenant before the people;

15. And as they that bare the ark were come unto Jordan, and the feet of the priests that bare the ark were dipped in the brim of the water, (for Jordan overfloweth all his banks all the time of harvest,)

16. That the waters which came down from above stood, and rose up upon a heap very far from the city Adam, that is beside Zaretan; and those that came down toward the sea of the plain, even the salt sea; failed, and were cut off: and the people passed over right against Jericho.

17. And the priests that bare the ark of the covenant of the Lord stood firm on dry ground in the midst of Jordan, and all the Israelites passed over on dry ground, until all the people were passed clean over Jordan.

1 Kings viii. 9. There was nothing in the ark save the two tables of stone, which Moses put there at Horeb, when the Lord made a covenant with the children of Israel, when they came out of the land of Egypt.

21. And I have set there a place for the ark, wherein is the covenant of the Lord, which he made with our fathers, when he brought them out of the land of Egypt.

2 Chron. v. 10. There was nothing in the ark save the two tables which Moses put therein at Horeb, when the Lord made a covenant with the children of Israel, when they came out of Egypt.

Heb. ix. 4. Which had the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had manna, and Aaron's rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant.

Deut. xxxi. 26. Take this book of the law, and put it in the side of the ark of the covenant of the Lord your God, that it may be there for a witness against thee.

Deut. ix. 11. And it came to pass at the end of forty days and forty nights, that the Lord gave me the two tables of stone, even the tables of the covenant.

Deut. xxix. 1. These are the words of the covenant which the Lord commanded Moses to make with the children of Israel in the land of Moab, besides the covenant which he made with them in Horeb.

Jer. xxxii. 13. And I charged Baruch before them, saying,

14. Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; Take these evidences, this evidence of the purchase, both which is sealed, and this evidence which is open; and put them in an earthen vessel, that they may continue many days.

15. For thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; Houses and fields and vineyards shall be possessed again in this land.

2 Mac. ii. 1. It is also found in the records, that Jeremy the prophet commanded them that were carried away to take of the fire, as it hath been signified:

4. It was also contained in the same writing, that the prophet, being warned of God, commanded the tabernacle and the ark to go with him, as he went forth into the mountain, where Moses climbed up, and saw the heritage of God.

5. And when Jeremy came thither, he found a hollow cave, wherein he laid the tabernacle, and the ark, and the altar of incense, and so stopped the door.

6. And some of those that followed him came to mark the way, but they could not find it.

7. Which when Jeremy perceived, he blamed them, saying, As for that place, it shall be unknown until the time that God

gather his people again together, and receive them unto mercy.

8. Then shall the Lord shew them these things, and the glory of the Lord shall appear, and the cloud also, as it was shewed unto Moses, and as when Solomon desired that the place might be honorably sanctified.

Writings upon Tables.

Hab. ii. 2. And the Lord answered me, and said, Write the vision, and make it plain upon tables, that he may run that readeth it.

3. For the vision is yet for an appointed time, but at the end it shall speak, and not lie: though it tarry, wait for it; because it will surely come, it will not tarry.

Ex. xxxii. 15. And Moses turned, and went down from the mount, and the two tables of the testimony were in his hand: the tables were written on both their sides; on the one side and on the other were they written.

16. And the tables were the work of God, and the writing was the writing of God, graven upon the tables.

Ex. xxxiv. 1. And the Lord said unto Moses, Hew thee two tables of stone like

unto the first: and I will write upon these tables the words that were in the first tables which thou brakest.

Deut. x. 1. At that time the Lord said unto me, Hew thee two tables of stone like unto the first, and come up unto me into the mount, and make thee an ark of wood.

2. And I will write on the tables the words that were in the first tables which thou brakest, and thou shalt put them in the ark.

3. And I made an ark of shittim-wood, and hewed two tables of stone like unto the first, and went up into the mount, having the two tables in mine hand.

4. And he wrote on the tables, according to the first writing, the ten commandments, which the Lord spake unto you in the mount, out of the midst of the fire, in the day of the assembly: and the Lord gave them unto me.

Isa. xxx. 8. Now go, write it before them in a table, and note it in a book, that it may be for the time to come for ever and ever:

9. That this is a rebellious people, lying children, children that will not hear the law of the Lord.

Luke i. 63. And he asked for a writing-

table, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all.

Job xix. 23. (*Translation of Isaac Leeser*,) Oh who would but grant, that my words might be written down! oh who would grant that they were entered in a book!

24. That they were hewn with an iron pen and (blackened with) lead for eternity in the hard rock!

Pliny says: the Parthians, even in his time, wrote on their clothes; and Livy speaks of certain books made of Linen, *lintei libri*, on which the names of magistrates, with the history of the Roman commonwealth were written, which were preserved in the temple of the goddess Moneta. Josephus speaks of decrees of state being written on brass. The Union Bible Dictionary says:

“What we call books were unknown to the ancient Jews, at least in their present convenient form. Letters were engraved on stone, brick, metal, (as lead and copper,) or wood, and also on cloth and skins, and at a later period on parchment. (2 Tim. iv. 13.) Tablets of lead and brass or copper, of great antiquity, have been discovered in modern times.

“The earliest mode of preserving inscriptions was by engraving on a rock. Such inscriptions often occur to the eastern traveller.

“The *writing table* mentioned, (Luke i. 63,) was probably a tablet covered with wax, or otherwise prepared to be written upon. (Deut. xxvii. 2, 3.) Such tablets were used in England as lately as the year 1300.

“Leaves and the bark of trees were also used, and were often prepared with much skill. The people of Ceylon write with a bodkin on broad and thick leaves, cut into narrow slips; and these leaves, being fastened together, make books, which they call Ollas. The missionaries often prepared tracts in this form, before paper and printing were introduced upon the island. In Sumatra, and among the Indians of North America, bark is still used for making letters and pictures.

“Leather, and linen or cotton cloth, were also used. These were prepared in the form of long rolls, twelve or fourteen inches wide, and fastened at each end to sticks, (like the rollers to which maps are attached,) and which were rolled together till they met midway. Sometimes these leaves were connected in the form of modern books, and opened in the same way. In this case the sheets were fastened to rods, and these rods passed through rings, and thus formed the back of the book.”

Sealed Writings and Seals.

Isa. xxix. 11. And the vision of all is become unto you as the words of a book that is sealed, which men deliver to one that is learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee, and he saith, I can not; for it is sealed.

Dan. vi. 17. And a stone was brought, and laid upon the mouth of the den; and the king sealed it with his own signet, and with the signet of his lords; that the purpose might not be changed concerning Daniel.

1 Kings xxi. 8. So she wrote letters in Ahab's name, and sealed them with his seal, and sent the letters unto the elders and to the nobles that were in his city, dwelling with Naboth.

Jer. xxii. 24. As I live, saith the Lord, though Coniah the son of Jehoiakim king of Judah were the signet upon my right hand, yet would I pluck thee thence.

Gen. xli. 42. And Pharaoh took off his ring from his hand, and put it upon Joseph's hand, and arrayed him in vestures of fine linen, and put a gold chain about his neck.

Esth. iii. 10. And the king took his ring from his hand, and gave it unto Haman the son of Hammedatha the Agagite, the Jews' enemy.

11. And the king said unto Haman, The silver is given to thee, the people also, to do with them as it seemeth good to thee.

12. Then were the king's scribes called on the thirteenth day of the first month, and there was written according to all that Haman had commanded unto the king's lieutenants, and to the governors that were over every province, and to the rulers of every people of every province, according to the writing thereof, and to every peo-

ple after their language; in the name of king Ahasuerus was it written, and sealed with the king's ring.

Esth. viii. 2. And the king took off his ring which he had taken from Haman, and gave it unto Mordecai. And Esther set Mordecai over the house of Haman.

8. Write ye also for the Jews, as it liketh you, in the king's name, and seal it with the king's ring; for the writing which is written in the king's name, and sealed with the king's ring, may no man reverse.

10. And he wrote in the king Ahasuerus' name, and sealed it with the king's ring, and sent letters by posts on horseback, and riders on mules, camels, and young dromedaries.

2 Tim. ii. 19. Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.

Books mentioned in the Bible that are not to be found among the sacred writings.

Book of the Wars of the Lord. - Num. xxi. 14.
 " " Jasher. - Jos. x. 13. [See 2 Sam. i. 18.]
 " " the Statutes of the Kingdom of Israel. 1
 Sam. x. 25.
 " " the Acts of Solomon. 1 Kings xi. 41.

Book of the Chronicles of the Kings of Israel. 1 Ki. xiv. 19.

“ “ Nathan the Prophet, } 1 Chron. xxix. 29.
 “ “ Gad the Seer. }

“ “ Ahijah the Prophet, } 2 Ch. ix. 29.
 “ “ the Visions of Iddo the Seer. }

“ “ Shemaiah the Prophet. 2 Chron. xii. 15.

“ “ the Story of the Prophet Iddo. 2 Ch. xiii. 22.

“ “ Jehu. - - - 2 Chron. xx. 34.

“ “ the Sayings of the Seers. 2 Chron. xxxiii. 19.

“ “ the Story of the Kings. 2 Chron. xxiv. 27.

Paul's Epistle to the Corinthians, which is not in the New Testament. 1 Cor. v. 9.

Paul's Epistle to the Collossians written from Laodicea. Col. iv. 16.

Jude's Epistle on the Gospel or Common Salvation. Jude 3.

The Prophecy of Enoch. Jude 14.

The many different Authors upon the Biography of Christ, written before the gospel of St. Luke. Luke i. 1.

CALVINISM DISPROVED.

Jer. xviii. 5. Then the word of the Lord came to me, saying.

6. O house of Israel, cannot I do with you as this potter? saith the Lord. Behold, as the clay is in the potter's hand, so are ye in mine hand, O house of Israel.

7. At what instant I shall speak concerning a nation, and concerning a kingdom, to pluck up, and to pull down, and to destroy it:

8. If that nation against whom I have pronounced, turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil that I thought to do unto them.

9. And at what instant I shall speak concerning a nation, and concerning a kingdom, to build and to plant it;

10. If it do evil in my sight, that it obey not my voice, then I will repent of the good, wherewith I said I would benefit them.

Ezek. xviii. 21. But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die.

27. Again, when the wicked man turneth away from his wickedness that he hath committed, and doeth that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive.

Ezek. xxxiii. 14. Again, when I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely die; if he turn from his sin, and do that which is lawful and right:

15. If the wicked restore the pledge, give again that he had robbed, walk in the statutes of life, without committing iniquity; he shall surely live, he shall not die.

Ecc. vii. 29. Lo, this only have I found, that God hath made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions.

Mark. viii. 34. And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he said unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

Mark. xvi. 16. He that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved; but he that believeth not, shall be damned,

17. And these signs shall follow them that believe: In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues.

Rev. xxii. 17. And the Spirit and the bride say, Come, And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

PASSAGES GENERALLY USED TO DEFEND CALVINISM.

Note to the reader.—The following passages are generally applied as proof for the doctrine of election and reprobation of the souls of men, so as to effect their salvation in eternity. Those passages from Proverbs and Amos, which say that the Lord brings evil upon the people, only allude to temporal destruction, by the sword, famine pestilence, &c. Those that speak of the election are

understood to allude to the selection of a nation, or an individual, to hold the office of the priesthood, and to take charge of the oracles of God, that they might be instruments in the hands of God of doing good among their fellow men. It is said that the Lord chose Israel: for what? To hold His oracles, that all nations might be blessed through and with faithful Abraham. It is said that Christ chose or elected twelve disciples, and one was damned at last.

Ex. ix. 16. And in very deed for this cause have I raised thee (Pharaoh) up, for to show in thee my power, and that my name may be declared throughout all the earth.

Prov. xvi. 4. The Lord hath made all things for himself; yea, even the wicked for the day of evil.

Isa. xlv. 7. I form the light and create darkness; I make peace, and create evil. I the Lord do all these things.

Jer. x. 23. O Lord, I know that the way of man is not in himself: it is not in man that walketh to direct his steps.

Amos. iii. 6. Shall a trumpet be blown in the city, and the people not be afraid? shall there be evil in the city, and the Lord hath not done it?

John. vi. 44. No man can come to me except the Father, which sent me, draw

him; and I will raise him up at the last day.

Acts. xiii. 48. And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life, believed.

1 Cor. ix. 24. Know ye not that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run that ye may obtain.

Eph. i. 4. According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy, and without blame before him in love.

5. Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will.

2 Thes. ii. 11. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie.

12. That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

13. But we are bound to give thanks always to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth.

Rom. viii. 20. For the creature was

made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope;

28. And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

29. For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first born among many brethren.

30. Moreover, whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified; and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

31. What shall we then say to these things? if God be for us who can be against us?

See also chapter ix.

2 Tim. ii. 20. But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold, and of silver, but also of wood and of earth; and some to honor, and some to dishonor.

1 Peter i. 1. Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Gallatia, Cappadocia, Asia and Bithynia.

2. Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification

of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ; grace unto you, and peace be multiplied.

CHRIST'S PARABLES.

BLADE, EAR AND CORN.

Mark iv. 26. And he said, so is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground;

27. And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how.

28. For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear; after that, the full corn in the ear.

29. But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.

BLIND LEADING THE BLIND.

Luke. vi. 39. And he spake a parable unto them: Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch?

CHILDREN SITTING IN THE MARKET.

Luke. vii. 31. And the Lord said, whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like?

32. They are like unto children sitting in the market place, and calling one to another, and saying, we have piped unto

you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.

See also Mat. xi. 16, 17.

CREDITOR AND TWO DEBTORS.

Luke. vii. 40. And Jesus answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee, and he saith, Master, say on.

41. There was a certain creditor which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty:

42. And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me, therefore, which of them will love him most?

43. Simon answered and said, I suppose that he to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, thou hast rightly judged.

ELDER AND YOUNGER SON.

Luke xv. 11. And he said, a certain man had two sons:

12. And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living.

13. And not many days after, the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wast-

ed his substance with riotous living.

14. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want.

15. And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.

16. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.

17. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger!

18. I will arise, and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee,

19. And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.

20. And he arose, and came to his father: But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran and fell on his neck, and kissed him.

21. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.

22. But the father said to his servants, bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet;

23. And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it: and let us eat and be merry:

24. For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

25. Now his eldest son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing:

26. And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.

27. And he said unto him, thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.

28. And he was angry, and would not go in; therefore came his father out, and entreated him.

29. And he answering, said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment; and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:

30. But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living

with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.

31. And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.

32. It was meet that we should make merry and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

FIG-TREE PLANTED IN A VINEYARD.

¶ Luke xiii. 6. He spake also this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

7. Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and find none: cut it down: why cumbereth it the ground?

8. And he answering said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it:

9. And if it bear fruit, well: and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.

FIG TREE WITH TENDER BRANCH.

Mat. xxiv. 32. Now learn a parable of the fig-tree: when the branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh:

33. So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors.

34. Verily I say unto you, this generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled.

35. Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

See also Luke. xxi. 29-31.

GRAIN OF MUSTARD SEED.

Mat. xiii. 31. Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field:

32. Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

See also Mark. iv. 30-32; Luke. xiii. 18, 19.

HUSBANDMEN IN A VINEYARD.

Luke. xx. 9. Then began he to speak to the people this parable: A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a far country for a long time.

10. And at the season he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give

him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away empty.

11. And again he sent another servant: and they beat him also, and entreated him shamefully, and sent him away empty.

12. And again he sent a third: and they wounded him also, and cast him out.

13. Then said the lord of the vineyard. What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence him when they see him.

14. But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir: come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15. So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do unto them?

16. He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17. And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner?

18. Whosoever shall fall upon that stone, shall be broken: but on whomso-

ever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

19 And the chief priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

See also Mat. xxi. 33-44. Mark xii. 1-10.

KING TAKING ACCOUNT OF HIS SERVANTS.

Mat. xviii. 23. Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king which would take account of his servants.

24. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him which owed him ten thousand talents.

25. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26. The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27. Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28. But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat,

saying, Pay me that thou owest.

29. And his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30. And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

31. So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

32. Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:

33. Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee?

34. And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormenters, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

35. So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

LABORERS IN THE VINEYARD.

Matt. xx. 1. For the kingdom of heaven

is like unto a man that is a householder, which went out early in the morning to hire laborers into his vineyard.

2. And when he had agreed with the laborers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

3. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market place.

4. And said unto them, go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.

5. Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour and did likewise.

6. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7. They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive.

8. So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the laborers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first.

9. And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny.

10. But when the first came, they supposed they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny.

11. And when they had received it, they murmured against the good man of the house,

12. Saying, These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day.

13. But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny?

14. Take that thine is, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee.

15. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with my own? Is thine eye evil because I am good?

16. So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called but few chosen.

LEAVEN.

Matt. xiii. 33. Another parable spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

See also, Luke xiii. 20, 21.

LOST PIECE OF MONEY.

Luke. xv. 8. Either what woman, having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it?

9. And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and her neighbors together, saying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost.

10. Likewise, I say unto you, There is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

LOST SHEEP.

Luke xv. 4. What man of you, having a hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it?

5. And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing.

6. And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbors, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost.

7. I say unto you, That likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that

repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

See also, Matt. xviii. 12-14.

A MAN TAKING A FAR JOURNEY

Mark xiii. 34. For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority unto his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch.

MARRAGE OF THE KING'S SON.

Matt. xxii. 1. And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said,

2. The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son,

3. And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.

4. Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them that are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner; my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready; come unto the marriage.

5. But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise:

6. And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them.

7. But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city.

8. Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

9. Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.

10. So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all, as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

11. And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:

12. And saith unto him, Friend how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless.

13. Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

14. For many are called, but few chosen.

See also Lu. xiv. 16-24.

NET CAST INTO THE SEA.

Matt. xiii. 47. Again, The kingdom of heaven is like unto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind:

48. Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49. So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just.

50. And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

THE PHARISEE AND PUBLICAN.

Luke xviii. 9. And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others.

10. Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.

11. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.

12. I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.

13. And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.

14. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

THE PEARLS.

Matt. xiii. 45. Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant-man seeking goodly pearls:

46. Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

A RICH MAN WHOSE GROUND BROUGHT FORTH PLENTIFULLY.

Luke. xii. 16. And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully:

17. And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

18. And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods.

19. And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry.

20. But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided?

21. So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS.

Luke xvi. 19. There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linnen, and fared sumptuously every day:

20. And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores,

21. And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover, the dogs came and licked his sores.

22. And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried;

23. And in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

24. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.

25. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy life time receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26. And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence.

27. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house:

28. For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29. Abraham saith unto him, they have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.

30. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent:

31. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will

they be persuaded though one rose from the dead.

THE SHEEPFOLD.

John x. 1. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.

2. But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep.

3. To him the porter openeth ; and the sheep hear his voice : and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

4. And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him : for they know his voice.

5. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him : for they know not the voice of strangers.

6. This parable spake Jesus unto them : but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

7. Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.

8. All that ever came before me are thieves and robbers : but the sheep did not hear them.

SERVANTS WAITING FOR THE RETURN OF
THEIR LORD FROM THE WEDDING.

Luke xii. 35. Let your loins be girded about, and your lights burning ;

36. And ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their Lord, when he will return from the wedding ; that, when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately.

37. Blessed are those servants, whom the lord, when he cometh, shall find watching ; verily I say unto you, That he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.

38. And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those servants.

39. And this know, that if the good man of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through.

40. Be ye therefore ready also : for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.

41. Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all ?

42. And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their meat in due season?

43. Blessed is that servant, whom his lord, when he cometh, shall find so doing.

44. Of a truth I say unto you, That he will make him ruler over all that he hath.

45. But and if that servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the men-servants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken;

46. The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

47. And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

48. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required; and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

THE SOWER.

Matt. xiii. 3. And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow:

4. And when he sowed, some seed fell by the way-side, and the fowls came and devoured them up:

5. Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth; and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth:

6. And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away:

7. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them:

8. But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some a hundred-fold, some sixty-fold, some thirty-fold. * *

18. Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

19. When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way-side.

20. But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth

the word, and anon with joy receiveth it :

21. Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth; for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended,

22. He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

23. But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some a hundred-fold, some sixty, some thirty.

See also Mar. iv. 3-8, 14-20. Lu. viii. 5-15.

THE TEN TALENTS.

Matt. xxv. 14. For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods.

15. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey.

16. Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents.

17. And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

18. But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money.

19. After a long time the lord of those servants cometh and reckoneth with them.

20. And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained besides them five talents more.

21. His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things; enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

22. He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold I have gained two other talents besides them.

23. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things; enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

24. Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where

thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strewed.

25. And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine.

26. His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, Thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strewed;

27. Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then, at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.

28. Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents.

29. For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not, shall be taken away even that which he hath.

30. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

See also Luke xix. 11-27.

TREASURE HID IN THE FIELD.

Matt. xiii. 44. Again the kingdom of heaven is like unto a treasure hid in a field: the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

THE TRUE VINE.

John xv. 1. I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

2. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away; and every branch that beareth fruit he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

3. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

4. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5. I am the vine, ye are the branches: he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit; for without me ye can do nothing.

6. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch that is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

7. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will and it shall be done unto you.

8. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples.

9. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you; continue ye in my love.

THE TWO SONS WORKING IN THE VINEYARD.

Matt. xxi. 28. But what think ye, A certain man had two sons; and he came to the first and said, Son, go work to-day in my vineyard.

29. He answered and said, I will not; but afterward he repented, and went.

30. And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go sir; and went not.

31. Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the publicans and harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.

32. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not; but the publicans and harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

THE UNCLEAN SPIRIT GOING OUT OF A MAN,
AND RETURNING WITH SEVEN OTHERS
MORE WICKED THAN HIMSELF.

Luke xi. 24. When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest; and, finding none, he saith, I will return to my house whence I came out.

25. And when he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished.

26. Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first.

THE UNJUST JUDGE.

Luke xviii. 1. And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint;

2. Saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man:

3. And there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary.

4. And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man;

5. Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming, she weary me.

6. And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith.

7. And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?

8. I tell you that he will avenge them

speedily. Nevertheless, when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?

WHEAT AND TARES.

Matt. xiii 24. Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field;

25. But while men slept, his enemy came, and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28. He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

29. But he said, Nay; lest, while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

30. Let both grow together until the harvest; and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

CHRIST'S REPLY TO SIGN SEEKERS.

Matt. xii. 38. Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee.

39. But he answered and said to them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas:

40. For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

See also Matt. xvi. 1-4.

Mark viii. 11. And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

12. And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a sign? verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation.

See also Luke xi. 29, 30.

John iv. 48. Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe.

CHRIST'S TEACHINGS CONCERNING THE GIFT OF HEALING.

Luke iv. 23. And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself; whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country.

24. And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country.

25. But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land;

26. But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow.

27. And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

1 Cor. xi. 29. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body.

30. For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.

2 Cor. xii. 7. And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abund-

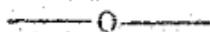
ance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure.

8. For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

Phil. ii. 27. For indeed he (Epaphroditus) was sick nigh unto death: but God had mercy on him; and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow.

2 Tim. iv. 20. Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick.

1. Tim. v. 23. Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake, and thine often infirmities.



CHRIST'S TEACHINGS CONCERNING MARRIAGE, ADULTERY, &c.

Matt. xix. 3. The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

4. And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning, made them male and female,

5. And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave

to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh?

6. Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

7. They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?

8. He saith unto them, Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

9. And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery; and whoso marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery.

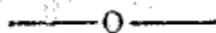
See Mark x. 2-12; also Luke xvi. 18; also 1 Cor. vii.

Matt. v. 27. Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery:

28. But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. * * * * *

31. It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement:

32. But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery.

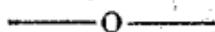


CHRIST MADE PERFECT THROUGH SUFFERING.

Heb. ii. 9. But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honor; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.

10. For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the Captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.

Heb. v. 9. And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him.



CIRCUMCISION.

Gen. xvii. 10. This is my covenant, which ye shall keep, between me and you, and thy seed after thee; Every man-child among you shall be circumcised.

11. And ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a token of

the covenant betwixt me and you.

12. And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man-child in your generations, he that is born in the house, or bought with money of any stranger, which is not of thy seed. * *

14. And the uncircumcised man-child, whose flesh of his foreskin is not circumcised, that soul shall be cut off from his people; he hath broken my covenant.

Gen. xxi. 4. And Abraham circumcised his son Isaac, being eight days old, as God had commanded him.

Acts vii. 8. And he gave him the covenant of circumceision. And so Abraham begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day.

—o—

CONSCIOUSNESS AFTER DEATH.

Isa. xlv. 23. I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, That unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear. (a)

Rom. xiv. 11. For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. (a)

(a) H. v. 7, p. 66.

Phil. ii. 9. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name:

10. That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth. (a)

Mat. xvi. 16. And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.

17. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. (a)

1 Cor. xii. 3. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed; and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. (a)

Rev. v. 13. And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I say, Blessing, and honor, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb, for ever and ever: (a)

Eph. i. 9. Having made known unto

(a) H. v. 7, p. 88.

us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure, which he hath purposed in himself;

10. That in the dispensation of the fullness of times, he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth, even in him. (a)

2 Cor. v. 17. Therefore if any man be in Christ he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. (a)

Rom. viii. 1. There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. (a)

Gen. xii. 3. And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed. (a)

1 Tim. iv. 10. For therefore we both labor and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Savior of all men, especially of those that believe. (a)

Jude 3. Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write

(a) H. v. 7, p. 88.

unto you, and exhort you, that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints. (b)

Matt. xii. 31. Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.

32. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. (b)

Heb. vi. 4. For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost,

5. And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come,

6. If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame. (b)

Matt. v. 25. Agree with thine adversary quickly, while thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliv-

(b) H. v. 7, p. 87.

er thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.

26. Verily I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing. (b)

Gal. iii. 16. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, and to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. * *

28. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

29. And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise. (b)

CONSCIOUSNESS OF THE WICKED AFTER DEATH—HELL IS A PLACE OF PUNISHMENT FOR THEM.

1 Pet. iii. 18. For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:

19. By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison;

20. Which sometime were disobedient,

(b) H. v. 7, p. 67.

I

when once the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water. (c)

1. Pet. 4. 6. For, for this cause was the gospel preached also to them which are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit. (c)

John x. 15. As the Father knoweth me even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

16. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. (c)

Matt. xv. 24. But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel. (c)

Matt. x. 5. These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not:

6. But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. (c)

Mark xvi. 15. And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.

16. He that believeth, and is baptized, shall be saved; but he that believeth not, shall be damned. (c)

Zech. ix. 10. And I will cut off the chariot from Ephraim, and the horse from Jerusalem, and the battle-bow shall be cut off: and he shall speak peace unto the heathen: and his dominion shall be from sea even to sea, and from the river even to the ends of the earth.

11. As for thee also, by the blood of thy covenant I have sent forth thy prisoners out of the pit wherein is no water.

12. Turn you to the strong hold, ye prisoners of hope: even to-day do I declare that I will render double unto thee. (c)

Heb. x. 29. Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace. (c)

Heb. xiii. 20. Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead, our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant. (c)

Luke. xvi. 22. And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried;

23. And in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom,

24. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue: for I am tormented in this flame.

25. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26. And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence. (d)

Isa. xxiv. 20. The earth shall reel to and fro like a drunkard, and shall be removed like a cottage; and the transgression thereof shall be heavy upon it; and it shall fall, and not rise again.

21. And it shall come to pass in that

(d) II. v. 7, p. 69.

day, that the Lord shall punish the host of the high ones that are on high, and the kings of the earth upon the earth,

22. And they shall be gathered together, as prisoners are gathered in the pit, and shall be shut up in the prison, and after many days shall they be visited.

23. Then the moon shall be confounded, and the sun ashamed, when the Lord of hosts shall reign in mount Zion, and in Jerusalem, and before his ancients gloriously. (d)

Rev. xix. 17. And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God;

18. That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great. (d)

Num. xvi. 30. But if the Lord make a new thing, and the earth open her mouth, and swallow them up, with all that appertain unto them, and they go

(d) H. v. 7, p. 69,

down quick unto the pit; then ye shall understand that these men have provoked the Lord.

31. And it came to pass, as he had made an end of speaking all these words, that the ground clave assunder that was under them :

32. And the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up, and their houses, and all the men that appertained unto Korah, and all their goods.

33. They, and all that appertained to them, went down alive into the pit, and the earth closed upon them: and they perished from among the congregation. (e)

Isa. xlii. 6. I the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thy hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles ;

7. To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison-house. (g)

Jude 11. Wo unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core.

(e) H. v. 7, p. 69. (g) H. v. 7, p. 81.

12. These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withered, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots;

13. Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever. (g)

Isa. xlix. 7. Thus saith the Lord, the Redeemer of Israel, and his Holy One, to him whom man despiseth, to him whom the nation abhoreth, to a servant of rulers, Kings shall see and arise, princes also shall worship, because of the Lord that is faithful, and the Holy One of Israel, and he shall choose thee.

8. Thus saith the Lord, In an acceptable time have I heard thee, and in a day of salvation have I helped thee; and I will preserve thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, to establish the earth, to cause to inherit the desolate heritages;

9. That thou mayest say to the prisoners, Go forth; to them that are in darkness, Show yourselves. They shall feed

(g) H. v. 7, p. 81.

in the ways, and their pastures shall be in all high places.

10. They shall not hunger nor thirst; neither shall the heat nor sun smite them: for he that hath mercy on them shall lead them, even by the springs of water shall he guide them. (g)

Isa. lxi. 1. The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the broken-hearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound;

2. To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn. (h)

Ezek. xxvi. 19. For thus saith the Lord God; When I shall make thee a desolate city, like the cities that are not inhabited; when I shall bring up the deep upon thee, and great waters shall cover thee;

20. When I shall bring thee down with them that descend into the pit, with the people of old time, and shall set thee in the low parts of the earth, in places desolate of old, with them that go down into the pit, that thou be not inhabited; and I

(g) H. v. 7, p. 81. (h) H. v. 7, p. 82.

shall set glory in the land of the living. (i)

Ezek. xxxii. 18. Son of man, wail for the multitude of Egypt, and cast them down, even her, and the daughters of the famous nations, unto the nether parts of the earth, with them that go down into the pit.

19. Whom dost thou pass in beauty? go down, and be thou laid with the uncircumcised.

20. They shall fall in the midst of them that are slain by the sword; she is delivered to the sword; draw her and all her multitudes.

21. The strong among the mighty shall speak to him out of the midst of hell with them that help him: they lie uncircumcised, slain by the sword.

22. Ashur is there, and all her company: his graves are about him; all of them slain, fallen by the sword.

23. Whose graves are set in the sides of the pit, and her company is round about her grave: all of them slain, fallen by the sword, which caused terror in the land of the living.

24. There is Elam and all her multitude round about her grave; and all of them

(i) H. v. 7, p. 82.

slain, fallen by the sword, which are gone down uncircumcised into the nether parts of the earth, which caused their terror in the land of the living; yet have they borne their shame with them that go down to the pit.

25. They have set her a bed in the midst of the slain with all her multitude: her graves are round about him: all of them uncircumcised, slain by the sword; though their terror was caused in the land of the living, yet have they borne their shame with them that go down to the pit: he is put in the midst of them that be slain.

26. There is Meshech, Tabal, and all her multitude: her graves are round about him; all of them uncircumcised, slain by the sword, though they caused their terror in the land of the living.

27. And they shall not lie with the mighty that are fallen of the uncircumcised, which are gone down to hell with their weapons of war: and they have laid their swords under their heads, but their iniquities shall be upon their bones, though they were the terror of the mighty in the land of the living.

28. Yea, thou shalt be broken in the midst of the uncircumcised, and shall lie

with them that are slain with the sword.

29. There is Edom, her kings, and all her princes, which with their might are slain by the sword: they shall lie with the uncircumcised, and with them that go down to the pit.

30. There be the princes of the north, all of them, and all the Zidonians, which are gone down with the slain; with their terror they are ashamed of their might; and they lie uncircumcised with them that be slain by the sword, and bear their shame with them that go down into the pit.

31. Pharaoh shall see them, and shall be comforted over all his multitude, even Pharaoh and all his army slain by the sword, saith the Lord God.

32. For I have caused my terror in the land of the living: and he shall be laid in the midst of the uncircumcised with them that are slain with the sword; even Pharaoh and all his multitude, saith the Lord God. (i)

Prov. v. 11. And thou mourn at the last, when thy flesh and thy body are consumed,

12. And say, How have I hated instruction, and my heart despised reproof. (j)

Prov. i. 24. Because I have called and

(i) H. v. 7, p. 82, 83. (j) H. v. 7, p. 83.

ye refused ; I have stretched out my hand, and no man regarded ;

25. But ye have set at naught all my counsel, and would none of my reproof :

26. I also will laugh at your calamity : I will mock when your fear cometh ;

27. When your fear cometh as desolation, and your destruction cometh as a whirlwind ; when your distress and anguish cometh upon you.

28. Then shall they call upon me, but I will not answer ; they shall seek me early, but they shall not find me. (j)

Prov. viii. 17. I love them that love me : and they that seek me early shall find me. (j)

Rev. xiv. 9. And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand.

10. The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation ; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb ;

11. And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever; and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name. (k)

Ps. xvi. 10, quoted by Peter in Acts 2: 27. "Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption.

31. He (David) seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption. [q]

Job xvii. 16. They (the wicked) shall go down to the bars of the pit, when our rest together is in the dust. [q]

Ps. xlix. 14. Like sheep they (the wicked) are laid in the grave; death shall feed on them; and the upright shall have *dominion* over them in *the morning*. [q]

Dan. vii. 27. The kingdom and *dominion* and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High. [r]

Amos ix. 2. Though they dig into hell, thence shall mine hand take them; though they climb up to heaven, thence will I bring them down. [s]

(k) H. v. 7, p. 84. (q) H. v. 7, p. 99, (r) H. v. 7, p. 99, 100. (s) H. v. 7, p. 100.

Deut. xxxii. 22. A fire is kindled in mine anger, and shall burn unto the lowest hell, and shall consume the earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains. [s]

Ps. cxxxix. 7. Whither shall I go from thy Spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence?

8. If I ascend up into heaven thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold thou art there.

9. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea;

10. Even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me. [s]

Prov. ix. 18. He (the simple man) knoweth not that the dead are there; (in the foolish woman's house) and that her guests are in the depths of hell. [s]

Ps. ix. 17. The wicked shall be turned into hell and all the nations that forget God. [s]

Ps. cxvi. 3. The pains of hell got hold upon me: I found trouble and sorrow. [s]

Ecc. ix. 10. Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest. [s]

Prov. xv. 24. The way of life is above to the wise, that he may depart from hell beneath. [s]

Job xxi. 13. They (the wicked) spend their days in wealth, and in a moment go down to the *grave*, ("nether world," I. Leser.) [s]

Hab. ii. 5. He is a proud man, neither keepeth at home who enlargeth his desire as hell. [t]

Mat. xi. 23. Thou Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shall be brought down to hell.

24. It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment than for thee. [t]

Mat. xvi. 18. Upon this rock will I build my church, and the *gates* of hell shall not prevail against it. [t]

Rev. i. 18. I am he that liveth and was dead, and behold I am alive for evermore, Amen, and have the *keys of hell* and of death. [t]

Rev. vi. 8. I looked and behold a pale horse, and his name that sat on him was death, and *hell* followed with him. [u]

Rev. xx. 10. The devil that deceived

(s) H. v. 7, p. 100. (t) H. v. 7, p. 101.

(u) H. v. 7, p. 116.

them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented *day and night* for ever and ever.

14. Death and *hell* were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. [v]

Luke xvi. 23. In *hell* (not the grave) he (the rich man) lifted up his eyes, being in torments. [v]

Mat. v. 22. Whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of *hell* fire, (not grave fire.) [v]

Mat. xviii. 9. It is better for thee to enter into life with one eye than having two eyes to be cast into *hell* fire, (not grave fire.) [v]

Mat. xxiii. 15. Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is made, ye make him two-fold more the child of *hell* (not grave) than yourselves. [v]

Luke xii. 47. That servant which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

48. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. [v]

(v) H. v. 7, p. 117.

Jas. v. 1. Go to now, ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you. [w]

2 Peter ii. 9. The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished.

Rom. ii. 6. Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

7. To them who by patient continuance in well-doing, seek for glory, and honor, and immortality; eternal life:

8. But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness; indignation and wrath,

9. Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil; of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;

10. But glory, honor, and peace to every man that worketh good; to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile. [w]

THE INWARD MAN AND THE OUTWARD MAN
—DEAD UNTO SIN—THE OLD MAN AND
NEW MAN.

2 Cor. iv. 16. For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

(w) II. v. 7, p. 118.

J

17. For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;

18. While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal. (k)

Eph. iii. 14. For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,

15. Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named,

16. That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; (k)

Rom. vi. 3. Know ye not that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ, were baptized into his death?

4. Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

5. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:

(k) II. v. 7, p. 84.

6. Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

7. For he that is dead is freed from sin.

8. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him;

9. Knowing that Christ, being raised from the dead, dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him.

10. For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

11. Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. [k]

Gal. 5. 24. And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh, with the affections and lusts.

Col. iii. 3. For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4. When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

2 Tim. ii. 11. It is a faithful saying: For if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him.

1 Pet. ii. 24. Who his own self bear

(k) H. v. 7, p. 84.

our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.

Eph. iv. 22. That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts;

23. And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;

24. And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness. [k]

Col. iii. 9. Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;

10. And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him. [l]

1 Cor. v. 7. Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our pass-over is sacrificed for us.

2 Cor. iii. 6. Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.

2 Cor. v. 17. Therefore, if any man be

(k) II. v. 7, p. 84. (l) II. v. 7, p. 85.

in Christ, he is a new creature; old things are passed away; behold, old things are become new.

Gal. vi. 15. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

Eph. iv. 22. That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts;

23. And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;

24. And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

THE BODY—THE OUTWARD MAN SPOKEN OF AS MAN.

Gen. ii. 7. And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. [1]

Job. xiv. 1. Man that is born of woman is of few days, and full of trouble.

10. But man dieth, and wasteth away: yea man giveth up the ghost, and where is he. [1]

Job. xxxii. 8. But there is a spirit in man: and the inspiration of the Almighty giveth them understanding. * * *

(1) II. v. 7, p. 85.

18. For I am full of matter, the spirit within me constraineth me.

Ps. li. 10. Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me. [1]

Zech. xii. 1. The burden of the word of the Lord for Israel, saith the Lord, which stretcheth forth the heavens, and layeth the foundation of the earth, and formeth the spirit of man within him. [1]

1 Cor. ii. 11. For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. [1]

Matt. xxvii. 35. And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet: They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots. [1]

Mat. xxviii. 5. And the angels said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified. [1]

Luke xxiii. 46. And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost. [1]

(1) II. v. 7, p. 85.

THE MORTALITY AND DEATH OF THE BODY,
BUT NOT OF THE SPIRIT OF MAN.

Jas. ii. 26. For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also. [1]

1 Cor. xv. 42. So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption. * * *

53. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.

54. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. (l)

Gen. xx. 3. But God came to Abimelech in a dream by night, and said to him, Behold, thou art but a dead man, for the woman which thou hast taken: for she is a man's wife. (m)

John vi. 63. It is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.

(l) H. v. 7, p. 85. (m) H. v. 7, p. 86.

YOUR MORTAL BODY, (NOT SPIRIT) A SUBSTANCE WHICH YOU ARE IN POSSESSION OF, WHICH BELONGS TO YOU, AS HOUSES AND LANDS BELONG TO MEN.

Rom. viii. 11. But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. [l]

Rom. vi. 12. Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. [m]

2 Pet. 1: 13. Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up by putting you in remembrance;

14. Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me.

15. Moreover, I will endeavor that ye may be able, after my decease, to have these things always in remembrance.

See 2 Cor. 5: 1-9.

— THE BODY OF MAN CALLED THE SOUL.

Ps. cvi. 15. And he gave them their request; but sent leanness into their soul.

[m]

Ps. cvii. 18. Their soul abhorreth all

(l) H. v. 7, p. 85. (m) H. v. 7, p. 86.

manner of meat, and they draw near unto the gates of death. [m]

Prov. xi. 25. The liberal soul shall be made fat: and he that watereth shall be watered also himself. (m)

Prov. xix. 15. Slothfulness casteth into a deep sleep; and an idle soul shall suffer hunger. (m)

Prov. xxvii. 7. The full soul loatheth an honey-comb; but to the hungry soul every bitter thing is sweet. (m)

Jer. iv. 10. Then said I, Ah, Lord God! surely thou hast greatly deceived this people and Jerusalem, saying, Ye shall have peace; whereas the sword reacheth unto the soul. (m)

Rev. xvi. 3. And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man; and every living soul died in the sea. (m)

Ps. cxix. 175. Let my soul live, and it shall praise thee; and let thy judgments help me. (m)

Heb. iv. 12. For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of

the thoughts and intents of the heart. (m)

Job. xii. 10. In whose hand is the soul of every living thing, and the breath of all mankind.

THE BODIES OF MEN WITHOUT THEIR SPIRITS CALLED MEN.

Job. xiv. 7. For there is hope of a tree, if it be cut down, that it will sprout again, and that the tender branch thereof will not cease.

8. Though the root thereof wax old in the earth and the stock thereof die in the ground;

9. Yet through the scent of water it will bud, and bring forth boughs like a plant.

10. But man dieth, and wasteth away: yea, man giveth up the ghost, and where is he?

11. As the waters fail from the sea, and the flood decayeth and drieth up,

12. So man lieth down, and riseth not: till the heavens be no more, they shall not awake, nor be raised out of their sleep.

13. O that thou wouldest hide me in the grave, that thou wouldest keep me secret, until thy wrath be past, that thou wouldest appoint me a set time, and remember me!

(m) H. v. 7, p. 86.

14. If a man die, shall he live again? all the days of my appointed time will I wait till my change come.

15. Thou shalt call, and I will answer thee: thou wilt have a desire to the work of thy hands. (f)

See Gen. xx. 3. Ex. xii. 33.

THE BODY OF JESUS, WITHOUT HIS SPIRIT,
SPOKEN OF AS JESUS.

See John xix. 33. xi. 13. xviii. 32. xxi. 19. Mark xv. 44. Rom. v. 10. vi. 3. 1 Cor. xi. 26.

TEXTS THAT SHOW THAT THE WORDS DESTROY AND PERISH ARE MISCONSTRUED.

Dan. ii. 12. For this cause the king was angry and very furious, and commanded to destroy all the wise men of Babylon.

13. And the decree went forth that the wise men should be slain; and they sought Daniel and his fellows to be slain. * * *

17. Then Daniel went to his house and made the thing known to Hananiah, Mischael, and Azariah, his companions:

18. That they would desire mercies of the God of heaven concerning this secret; that Daniel and his fellows should not perish with the rest of the wise men of Babylon. [n]

(f) H. v. 7, p. 69, 70. (n) H. v. 7, p. 97.

Luke xxi. 18. But there shall not a hair of your head perish.

Luke. xv. 17. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! [n]

Luke xi. 51. From the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation. [n]

Job iv. 9. By the blast of God they perish, and by the breath of his nostrils are they consumed. * * *

20. They are destroyed from morning to evening; they perish forever without any regarding it.

21. Doth not their excellency which is in them go away? they die, even without wisdom. [n]

Job. vi. 18. The paths of their way are turned aside; they go to nothing and perish. [n]

Ecc. vii. 15. All things have I seen in the days of my vanity: there is a just man that perisheth in his righteousness, and there is a wicked man that longeth his life in his wickedness. [n]

(n) H. v. 7, p. 27.

Isa. lvii. 1. The righteous perisheth, and no man layeth it to heart: and merciful men are taken away, none considering that the righteous is taken away from the evil to come. [o]

2 Pet. iii. 5. For this they are willingly ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water;

6. Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.

Jer. ix. 12. Who is the wise man, that may understand this? and who is he to whom the mouth of the Lord hath spoken, that he may declare it, for what the land perisheth and is burnt up like a wilderness, that none passeth through? [p]

Job. ix. 22. This is one thing, therefore I said it, He destroyeth the perfect and the wicked. [p]

Rev. xi. 18. And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth. [p]

(o) II. v. 7, p. 97, 98. (p) II. v. 7, p. 98.

Job. xix. 26. And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God. [p]

Ps. cxlv. 20. The Lord preserveth all them that love him : but all the wicked will he destroy. [p]

The definition of the word DESTROY, in *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary* of 1865, is as follows:

1. To unbuild; to pull down; to separate violently into its constituent parts; to break up the structure and organic existence of.

2. To ruin; to bring to naught; to put an end to; to annihilate.

3. To put an end to the life, prosperity, or beauty of; to kill; to devastate. [p]

MATTER HAD NO BEGINNING.

Gen. i. 2. And the earth was without form, and void; and darknes was upon the face of the deep; and the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. [p]

Heb. xi. 3. Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God; so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear. [p]

(p) H. v. 7, p. 28.

THE SPIRITS OF MEN HAD NO BEGINNING.

John i. 6. There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. [p]

John xvi. 27. For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.

28. I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world; again I leave the world, and go to the Father. [p]

John xvii. 5. And now, O Father, glorify thou me, with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was. [p]

Jer. i. 4. Then the word of the Lord came unto me, saying,

5. Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee; and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations. [p]

John ix. 1. And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth.

2. And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?

3. Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

See Job xxxviii. 4-7. Heb. ii. 14-17. Acts. viii. 33. Luke ii. xl. 52. John vi. 62. Num. xvi. 22. Job xii. 10.

ANGELS ARE MEN.

Rev. xxii. 8. And I John saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which showed me these things.

9. Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God. [q]

Heb. i. 13. But to which of the angels said he at any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool?

14. Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation? [q]

Heb. xiii. 2. Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby some have entertained angels unawares. [q]

Matt. xxv. 31. When the Son of Man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory. [q]

Zech. xiv. 5. And ye shall flee to the

(q) II. v. 7, p. 99.

valley of the mountains; for the valley of the mountains shall reach unto Azal: yea, ye shall flee like as ye fled before the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah: and the Lord my God shall come, and all the saints with thee. [q]

Gen. xix. 1. And there came two angels to Sodom at even; and Lot sat in the gate of Sodom; and Lot, seeing them, rose up to meet them; and he bowed himself with his face toward the ground.

10. But the men put forth their hand, and pulled Lot into the house to them, and shut to the door. * * *

12. And the men said unto lot, Hast thou here any besides? son-in-law, and thy sons, and thy daughters, and whatsoever thou hast in the city, bring them out of this place.

15. And when the morning arose, then the angels hastened Lot, saying, Arise, take thy wife, and thy two daughters which are here, lest thou be consumed in the iniquity of the city.

16. And while he lingered, the men laid hold upon his hand, and upon the hand of his wife, and upon the hand of his two daughters; the Lord being merciful unto

(q) H. v. 7, p. 99.

him; and they brought him forth, and set him without the city. [q]

THE TRANSIT OF THE SPIRITS OF MEN AFTER
THE DEATH OF THEIR BODIES.

Ecc. viii. 8. There is no man that hath power over the spirit to retain the spirit: neither hath he power in the day of death. [w.]

Ecc. xi. 5. Thou knowest not what is the way of the spirit. [w]

Ecc. xii. 7. Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it.

Ecc. iii. 21. Who knoweth the spirit of man that goeth upward, and the spirit of the beast that goeth downward to the earth. [w]

1 Kings xvii. 20. And he cried unto the Lord, and said, O Lord my God, hast thou also brought evil upon the widow with whom I sojourn, by slaying her son?

21. And he stretched himself upon the child three times, and cried unto the Lord, and said, O Lord my God, I pray thee, let this child's soul come into him again.

22. And the Lord heard the voice of Elijah; and the soul of the child came into him again, and he revived.

(q) H. v. 7. p. 99, (w) H. v. 7, p. 118.

23. And Elijah took the child, and brought him down out of the chamber into the house, and delivered him unto his mother: and Elijah said, See, thy son liveth.

Gen. xxxv. 18. And it came to pass as her soul was in departing, (for she died,) that she called his name Ben-oni: but his father called him Benjamin.

THE CONSCIOUS AND HAPPY CONDITION AFTER DEATH, OF CERTAIN CLASSES OF PEOPLE WHO WERE NOT SAINTS BEFORE THEIR DEATH.

Mat. xvi. 27. The Son of Man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works. [v]

Luke xiv. 13. (Jesus said to "one of the chief Pharisees," 1 v.) When thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind:

14. And thou shalt be blessed; for they can not recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just. [v]

Mat. x. 42. Whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones, a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple,

(v) H. v. 7, p. 117.

(verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward. [v]

Matt. xxv. 31. When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory :

32. And before him shall be gathered all nations ; and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats :

33. And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world :

35. For I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat : I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink : I was a stranger, and ye took me in :

36. Naked, and ye clothed me : I was sick, and ye visited me : I was in prison, and ye came unto me.

37. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, and fed thee ? or thirsty, and gave thee drink ?

38. When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in ? or naked, and clothed thee ?

(v) H. v. 7, p. 117.

39. Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?

40. And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.

41. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:

42. For I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink:

43. I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44. Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?

45. Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.

46. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

John xiv. 2. In my Father's house are

many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

3. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you unto myself; that where I am there ye may be also. [w]

1 Cor. xv. 35. How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come?

39. All flesh is not the same flesh; but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds.

40. There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial; but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another.

41. There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory.

42. So also is the resurrection of the dead. [w]

1 John iii. 2. Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for *we shall see him as he is.* [w]

See Matt. xix. 14. Isa. lxi. 5. Joel ii. 29. 2 Kings iv. 26.

THE CONSCIOUS EXISTENCE OF THE SPIRITS OF THE SAINTS AFTER DEATH, AND BEFORE THE RESURRECTION.

Job xiv. 14. If a man die, shall he live again? all the days of my appointed time will I WAIT, till my change come.

Luke ii. 28. Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said,

29. Lord now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word.

30. For mine eyes have seen thy salvation. [w]

2 Tim. iv. 6. I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

Phil. i. 21. For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.

22. But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labor: yet what I shall choose I wot not.

23. For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better:

24. Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you. [w]

2 Cor. v. 1. We know that if our earthly

house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

2. For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven:

3. If so be that being clothed we shall not be found naked.

4. For we that are in this tabernacle do groan, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life.

6. Therefore we are always confident, knowing that while we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord:

7. (For we walk by faith, not by sight:)

8. We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

9. Wherefore we labor, that whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him. [x]

Luke xxiii. 42. And he said unto Jesus, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

43. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

(x) II. v. 7, p. 119.

John xx. 17. Jesus saith unto her, (Mary) Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God. (x)

2 Cor. xii. 1. It is not expedient for me doubtless to glory. I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord.

2. I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) such an one caught up to the third heaven.

3. And I knew such a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell; God knoweth;)

4. How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter. (x)

1 Kings viii. 27. Will God indeed dwell on the earth? behold the heaven and heaven of heavens can not contain thee: how much less this house that I have builded? (x)

2 Chron. vi. 18, contains nearly the same.

1 Tim. vi. 15. Which in his times he shall show, who is the blessed and only

(x). H. v. 7, p. 119.

Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords;

16. Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honor and power everlasting. Amen. (x)

Deut. x. 14. Behold, the heaven, and the heaven of heavens, is the Lord's thy God, the earth also, with all that therein is. (x)

Ps. cxv. 16. The heaven, even the heavens, are the Lord's.

See also 2 Chron. ii. 6; vi. 35; Gen. ii. 4, and many other texts.

Heb. xii. 22. But ye are come unto mount Zion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,

23. To the general assembly and church of the first-born, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect. (m)

Matt. xxii. 31. But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying,

32. I am the God of Abraham, and the

(x) II. v. 7, p. 119. (m) II. v. 7, p. 86.

God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living. (m)

See Rev. xx. 8, 9. Rom. viii. 38, 39. Rev. x. 11.

1 Cor. xv. 17. And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins.

18. Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ *are perished*.

19. If in this life only, we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.

John xiii. 33. Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me; and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come, so say I to you. (y)

John xvi. 16. A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father. (y)

Deut. xxxiv. 5. So Moses the servant of the Lord died there in the land of Moab, according to the word of the Lord.

6. And he buried him in a valley in the land of Moab, over against Beth-peor: but no man knoweth of his sepulchre unto this day.

7. And Moses was an hundred and

(m) II. v. 7, p. 83. (y) II. v. 7, p. 120.

twenty years old when he died: his eye was not dim, nor his natural force abated.

(y)

Josh. i. 1. Now after the death of Moses, the servant of the Lord, it came to pass, that the Lord spake unto Joshua the son of Nun, Moses' minister, saying,

2. Moses my servant is dead; now therefore arise, go over this Jordan, thou and all this people, unto the land which I do give to them, even to the children of Israel. [y]

Matt. xvii. 1. And after six days, Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them into an high mountain apart,

2. And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

3. And behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

Jude 9. Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil, he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee. (y)

Num. xx. 10. And Moses and Aaron gathered the congregation together before

(y) H. v. 7, p. 129.

the rock, and he said unto them, Hear now, ye rebels; must we fetch you water out of this rock? (y)

Col. i 18. And he is the head of the body, the church who is the beginning, the first born from the dead; that in all things he might have the pre-eminence. [y]

1. Cor. xv. 22. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

23. But every man in his own order: Christ the first-fruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. (y)

Acts ii. 29. Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day.

34. For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he saith himself, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

35. Until I make thy foes thy footstool.

Rev. v. 9. And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

10. And hast made us unto our God

(y) H. v. 7, p. 120.

kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth. (y)

Rev. vi. 1. And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts, saying, Come and see.

2. And I saw, and behold, a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

4. And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.

9. And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the ALTAR the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held:

10. And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11. And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow-servants

(y) H. v. 7, p. 120.

also and their bretheren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

12. And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and lo, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood:

13. And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs when she is shaken of a mighty wind.

14. And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places.

15. And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every freeman, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains;

16. And said to the mountains and rocks, fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb:

17. For the great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand? (z)

Heb. xiii 10. We have an ALTAR, where-

(z) H. v. 7, p. 121.

of they have no right to eat which serve the tabernacle. (z)

Mat. v. 23. Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the ALTAR, and there rememberst that thy brother hath aught against thee,

24. Leave there thy gift before the ALTAR, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. (z)

SPIRITS CALLED SOULS.

Rev. vi. 9. And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the ALTAR the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held:

Mat. x. 28. And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. (z)

1. Thes. v. 23. And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly: and I pray God your whole spirit, and soul, and body, be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. (z)

Job. xiv. 22. But his flesh upon him shall have pain, and his soul within him shall mourn. (z)

Job xxvii. 8. For what is the hope of the

(z) H. v. 7, p. 121.

hypocrite, though he hath gained, when God taketh away his soul? (z)

Job xxxiii. 18. He keepeth back his soul from the pit, and his life from perishing by the sword. (z)

Ps. lxxxvi. 4. Rejoice the soul of thy servant: for unto thee, O Lord, do I lift up my soul. (z)

Mic. vi. 7. Will the Lord be pleased with thousands of rams, or with ten thousands of rivers of oil? shall I give my first born for my transgression, the fruit of my body for the sin of my soul?

LIVING SPIRITS WITHOUT BODIES.

Luke. xxiv. 36. And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you,

39. Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

Acts. xxiii. 8. For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angel nor spirit: but the Pharisees confess both.

9. And there arose a great cry: and the scribes that were of the Pharisees' part arose, and strove saying, We find no evil in this man: but if a spirit or an angel

(z) H. v. 7, p. 121.

L

hath spoken to him, let us not fight against God.

Heb. i. 13. But to which of the angels said he at any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool?

14. Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

Rev. xvi. 13. And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

14. For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.

Job. i. 6. Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them.

7. And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down it.

Mark. v. 2. And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit,

3. Who had his dwelling among the tombs; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains:

6. But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him,

7. And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the Most High God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

8. (For he said unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit.)

9. And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

10. And he besought him much that he would not send them away out of the country.

11. Now there was there, nigh unto the mountains, a great herd of swine feeding.

12. And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13. And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand;) and were choked in the sea.

TEXTS WHICH ARE USED TO ENDEAVOR TO

SHOW THAT MAN IS UNCONSCIOUS AFTER DEATH.

Job. iii. 17. There the wicked cease from troubling; and there the weary be at rest.

18. There the prisoners rest together; they hear not the voice of the oppressor.

Job x. 18. Wherefore then hast thou brought me forth out of the womb? Oh that I had given up the ghost, and no eye had seen me!

19. I should have been as though I had not been; I should have been carried from the womb to the grave.

Job xiv. 21. His sons come to honor, and he knoweth it not; and they are brought low, but he perceiveth it not of them.

Ps. vi. 5. For in death there is no remembrance of thee: in the grave who shall give thee thanks?

Ps. xxx. 9. What profit is there in my blood, when I go down to the pit? shall the dust praise thee? shall it declare thy truth?

Ps. lxxxviii. 10. Wilt thou shew wonders to the dead? shall the dead arise and praise thee?

11. Shall thy loving kindness be declared in the grave? or thy faithfulness in destruction?

Ps. cxv. 17. The dead praise not the Lord neither any that go down into silence.

Ps. cxlvi. 4. His breath goeth forth, he returneth to his earth; in that very day his thoughts perish.

Isa. xxxviii. 16. O Lord, by these things men live, and in all these things is the life of my spirit: so wilt thou recover me, and make me to live,

17. Behold, for peace I had great bitterness; but thou hast in love to my soul delivered it from the pit of corruption; for thou hast cast all my sins behind thy back.

18. For the grave cannot praise thee, death cannot celebrate thee: they that go down into the pit cannot hope for thy truth.

19. The living, the living, he shall praise thee, as I do this day: the father to the children shall make known thy truth.

John. iii. 15. That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.

26. He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

DIFFERENT KINDS OF LIFE AND DEATH
WHICH OFTEN PRECEDES MAN'S NATURAL

DEATH—ETERNAL LIFE—EVELASTING LIFE
 —LIFE—NEWNESS OF LIFE—ALIVE UNTO
 GOD—LIFE OF FAITH—NEW CREATURE—
 NEW MAN—BORN OF GOD—SONS OF GOD
 —BORN OF WATER AND OF THE SPIRIT—
 DEAD TO SIN—DEAD IN SIN—TWICE DEAD.

Rom. vi. 2. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?

3. Know ye not that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ, were baptized into his death?

4. Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death; that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

5. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection

6. Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

7. For he that is dead is free from sin.

8. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:

9. Knowing that Christ, being raised from the dead, dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him.

10. For in that he died, he died unto

sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

11. Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. (a)

Jno. xi. 25. Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live:

26. And whosoever liveth, and believeth in me, shall never die. Believest thou this? (a)

Gal. ii. 20. I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. (b)

Jno. vi. 47. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.

51. I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live forever: and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

53. Then said Jesus unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the

(a) H. v. 5, p. 180. (b) H. v. 5, p. 181.

flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.

54. Whoso eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. (c)

Jno. 3. 36. He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son, shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him. (c)

Jno. v. 24. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

39. Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.

40. And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. (c)

Jno. xvii. 3. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent. (c)

1 John v. 11. And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life: and this life is in his Son.

12. He that hath the Son, hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God, hath not life. (c)

(c) H. v. 5, p. 182.

13. These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God, that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.

Gen. ii. 16. And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat:

17. But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. (a)

2 Pet. iii. 8. But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing; that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. (a)

Ezek. v. 6. And when thou hast accomplished them, lie again on thy right side, and thou shalt bear the iniquity of the house of Judah forty days: I have appointed thee each day for a year. (a)

Dan. ix. 24. Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the

(a) H. v. 5, p. 160.

vision and prophecy, and to anoint the Most Holy. (a)

Eph. ii. 1. And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins.

4. But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,

5. Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ; (by grace ye are saved.)

6. And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places, in Christ Jesus. (a)*

Col. ii. 10. And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power;

12. Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

13. And you being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses. (a)

Eph. v. 14. Wherefore he saith, Awake, thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light. (b)

Jude 12. These are spots in your feasts

(a) H. v. 5, p. 180.

(b) H. v. 5, p. 181.

of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots. (b)

Rom. vii. 5. For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death:

6. But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

8. But sin taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead.

9. For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived and I died. (b)

Rom. iv. 15. Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is there is no transgression. (b)

1 Tim. v. 6. But she that liveth in pleasure, is dead while she liveth. (c)

Prov. xv. 10. Correction is grievous unto him that forsaketh the way: and he that hateth reproof shall die. [c]

(b) II. v. 5, p. 131. (c) H. v. 5, p. 122.

Prov. xix. 10. He that keepeth the commandment keepeth his own soul; but he that despiseth his ways shall die. [c]

Jer. xxxi. 30. But every one shall die for his own iniquity; every man that eateth the sour grape, his teeth shall be set on edge. [c]

Rom. viii. 6. For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.

13. For if ye live after the flesh ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. [c]

Gal. v. 24. And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh, with the affections and lusts. [c]

Gal. vi. 14. But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. [c]

Col. iii. 3. For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4. When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory. [c]

Rom. vii. 9. For I was alive without the law once; but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died. [d]

(c) H. v. 5, p. 182. (d) H. v. 5, p. 183.

Jno. v. 26. For as the Father hath life in himself, so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself. [d]

Rom. vi. 23. For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord. [e]

2 Chron. xxv. 4. But he slew not their children, but did as it is written in the law in the book of Moses, where the Lord commanded, saying, The fathers shall not die for the children, neither shall the children die for the fathers, but every man shall die for his own sin. [e]

Ezek. iii. 18. When I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely die; and thou givest him not warning, nor speakest to warn the wicked from his wicked way, to save his life; the same wicked man shall die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at thine hand. [e]

Lev. xvii. 11. For the life of the flesh is in the blood; and I have given it to you upon the altar, to make an atonement for your souls: for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul.

Ezek. xviii. 4. Behold, all souls are mine; as the soul of the father, so also the

(d) H. v. 5, p. 183.

(e) H. v. 5, p. 184.

soul of the son is mine: the soul that sinneth, it shall die.

Acts viii. 20. But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought to purchase the gift of God with money. [e]

Heb. vi. 4. For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the *heavenly gift*, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost. [e]

2 Cor. v. 17. Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold all things are become new. [e]

Eph. iv. 24. And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness. [e]

Rom. viii. 14. For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

15. For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. [e]

Jno. i. 12. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:

(e) H. v. 5, p. 124.

13. Which were born not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. [e]

Jno. iii. 5. Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water, and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

Jno. x. 10. The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.

1. John. iii. 15. Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.

B. of C. xxviii. 11. Wherefore, it came to pass, that the devil tempted Adam and he partook of the forbidden fruit, and transgressed the commandment, wherein he became subject to the will of the devil, because he yielded unto temptation; wherefore, I the Lord God caused that he should be cast out from the garden of Eden, from my presence, because of his transgression; wherein he became spiritually dead; which is the first death, even that same death, which is the last death, which is spiritual, which shall be pro-

(e) H. v. 5, p. 184.

nounced upon the wicked when I shall say—Depart ye cursed.

See the following texts in the Book of Mormon:

2. Neph vi. 4; Mosiah i. 8, 10; Alma xvi. 25; xix. 4; Moroni x.



CONTINUOUS REVELATION.

Jer. xxxiii. 1. Moreover the word of the Lord came unto Jeremiah the second time while he was yet shut up in the court of the prison, saying,

2. Thus saith the Lord the maker thereof, the Lord that formed it to establish it; The Lord is his name;

3. Call unto me, and I will answer thee, and shew thee great and mighty things, which thou knowest not.

4. For thus saith the Lord, the God of Israel, concerning the houses of this city, and concerning the houses of the kings of Judah, which are thrown down by the mounts, and by the sword;

5. They come to fight with the Chaldeans, but it is to fill them with the dead bodies of men, whom I have slain in mine anger and in my fury, and for all whose wickedness I have hid my face from this city.

6. Behold, I will bring it health and cure, and I will cure them, and will reveal unto them the abundance of peace and truth.

7. And I will cause the captivity of Judah and the captivity of Israel to return, and will rebuild them as at the first.

Dan. ii. 47. The king answered unto Daniel, and said, Of a truth it is, that your God is a God of gods, and a Lord of kings, and a revealer of secrets, seeing thou couldest reveal this secret.

Gal. i. 15. But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace,

16. To reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the heathen; immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood.

1 Cor. xiv. 26. How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done unto edifying.

Eph. i. 15. Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints,

16. Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers;

17. That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him :

18. The eyes of your understanding being enlightened ; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints.

19. And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power.

Eph. iii. 1. For this cause, I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles,

2. If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which is given to me youward :

3. How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery, as I wrote afore in few words.

Prov. ii. 1. My son, if thou wilt receive my words, and hide my commandments with thee ;

2. So that thou incline thine ear unto wisdom, and apply thine heart to understanding ;

3. Yea, if thou criest after knowledge, and liftest up thy voice for understanding ;

4. If thou seekest her as silver, and

searchest for her as for hid treasures :

5. Then shalt thou understand the fear of the Lord, and find the knowledge of God.

6. For the Lord giveth wisdom : out of his mouth cometh knowledge and understanding.

7. He layeth up sound wisdom for the righteous : he is a buckler to them that walk uprightly.

8. He keepeth the paths of judgment, and preserveth the way of his saints.

9. Then shalt thou understand righteousness, and judgment, and equity ; yea, every good path.

10. When wisdom entereth into thine heart, and knowledge is pleasant unto thy soul ;

11. Discretion shall preserve thee, understanding shall keep thee :

12. To deliver thee from the way of the evil man, from the man that speaketh froward things ;

13. Who leave the paths of uprightness, to walk in the ways of darkness.

Prov. iv. 18. But the path of the just is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day.

19. The way of the wicked is as darkness : they know not at what they stumble.

Isa. lx. 1. Arise, shine; for thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee.

2. For behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the Lord shall arise upon thee, and his glory shall be seen upon thee.

3. And the Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising.

Micah iii. 5. Thus saith the Lord concerning the prophets that make my people err, that bite with their teeth, and cry, Peace; and he that putteth not into their mouths, they even prepare war against him:

6. Therefore, night shall be unto you, that ye shall not have a vision; and it shall be dark unto you, that ye shall not divine; and the sun shall go down over the prophets, and the day shall be dark over them.

7. Then shall the seers be ashamed, and the diviners confounded: yea, they shall all cover their lips; for there is no answer of God.

2 Pet. i. 19. We have a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn,

and the day-star arise in your hearts.

1 Cor. xiii. 12. For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

Col. i. 12. Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be made partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light.

13. Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son.

1 Thess. v. 3. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.

4. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief.

5. Ye are all the children of the light, and the children of the day; we are not of the night, nor of darkness.

6. Therefore let us not sleep, as do others, but let us watch and be sober.

7. For they that sleep, sleep in the night; and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

8. But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breast-plate of faith and love; and for an helmet, the hope of salvation.

Deut. xxviii. 29. And thou shalt grope at noon-day, as the blind gropeth in darkness, and thou shalt not prosper in thy ways: and thou shalt be only oppressed and spoiled evermore, and no man shall save thee.

Ps. lxxxii. 4. Deliver the poor and needy: rid them out of the hand of the wicked.

5. They know not, neither will they understand: they walk on in darkness: all the foundations of the earth are out of course.

Eccl. ii. 14. The wise man's eyes are in his head; but the fool walketh in darkness: and I myself perceived also that one event happeneth to them all.

Isa. lix. 1. Behold, the Lord's hand is not shortened that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear;

2. But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.

8. The way of peace they know not: and there is no judgment in their goings: they have made them crooked paths: whosoever goeth therein shall not know peace.

9. Therefore is judgment far from us, neither doth justice overtake us: we wait

for light, but behold obscurity; for brightness, but we walk in darkness.

10. We grope for the wall like the blind, and we grope as if we had no eyes: we stumble at noon-day as in the night; we are in desolate places as dead men.

Jer. xxiii. 11. For both the prophet and priest are profane; yea, in my house have I found their wickedness, saith the Lord.

12. Wherefore their ways shall be unto them as slippery ways in the darkness: they shall be driven on, and fall therein: for I will bring evil upon them, even the year of their visitation, saith the Lord.

Jno. viii. 12. Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

Jno. xii. 46. I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness.

1 Jno. i. 6. If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth:

7. But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

Ps. cxii. 4. Unto the upright there ariseth light in the darkness: he is gracious and full of compassion, and righteous.

Isa. v. 18. Wo unto them that draw iniquity with cords of vanity, and sin as it were with a cart-rope:

19. That say, Let him make speed, and hasten his work, that we may see it: and let the counsel of the Holy One of Israel draw nigh and come, that we may know it.

20. Wo unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!

21. Wo unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!

Isa. xlii. 14. I have long time holden my peace; I have been still, and refrained myself; now will I cry like a travailing woman I will destroy and devour at once.

15. I will make waste mountains and hills, and dry up all their herbs; and I will make their rivers islands, and I will dry up the pools.

16. And I will bring the blind by a way that they knew not; I will lead them in paths that they have not known: I will make darkness light before them, and crooked things straight. These things will I do unto them, and not forsake them.

Isa. l. 10. Who is among you that feareth the Lord, that obeyeth the voice of his servant, that walketh in darknes, and hath no light? let him trust in the name of the Lord, and stay upon his God.

Jer. xiii. 16. Give glory to the Lord your God, before he calls darkness, and before your feet stumble upon the dark mountains, and while ye look for light, he turn it into the shadow of death, and make it gross darkness.

Jno. iii. 19. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.

20. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reprov'd.

21. But he that doeth truth, cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

Acts xxvi. 15. And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.

16. But rise, and stand upon thy feet : for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee ;

17. Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee,

18. To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

2 Cor. iv. 6. For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.

7. But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

1 Pet. ii. 9. But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvelous light.

Ps. cvii. 13. Then they cried unto the Lord in their trouble, and he saved them out of their distresses.

14. He brought them out of darkness and the shadow of death, and break their bands in sunder.

Matt. xiii. 11. He answered and said

unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12. For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance : but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.

Jno. vii. 16. Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17. If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself.

Jno. x. 4. And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him : for they know his voice.

5. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him ; for they know not the voice of strangers.

14. I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep and am known of mine.

37. If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.

38. But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works : that ye may know and believe that the Father is in me, and I in him.

1. Cor. ii. 4. And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of

man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit, and of power:

5. That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

8. Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

9. But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.

10. But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit; for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

11. For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12. Now we have received not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

13. Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

14. But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he

know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

15. But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man.

16. For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ.

1 Tim. iv. 3. Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving by them which *know* the truth.

Job xix. 25. For I know that my Redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth.

Num. xxiv. 15. And he took up his parable, and said, Balaam the Son of Beor hath said, and the man whose eyes are open hath said:

16. He hath said, which heard the words of God, and knew the knowledge of the Most High, which saw the vision of the Almighty, falling into a trance but having his eyes open.

See *Prophets in the Last Days*.

CONVERSION OF ISRAEL AND JUDAH.

2 Nephi ii. 1. And out of weakness he shall be made strong, in that day when my work shall commence among ALL *my*

people, unto the restoring thee, O house of Israel, saith the Lord. And thus prophesied Joseph saying: Behold, that seer will the Lord bless; and they that seek to destroy him, shall be confounded.

2 Nephi v. 2. And now, the words which I shall read, are they which Isaiah spake concerning ALL the house of Israel.

4. And now I, Jacob, would speak somewhat concerning these words: For behold, the Lord has shown unto me, that those who were at Jerusalem, from whence we came, have been slain and carried away captive; nevertheless, the Lord has shewn unto me that they should return again. And he also has shewn unto me, that the Lord God, the Holy One of Israel, should manifest himself unto them in the flesh; and after he should manifest himself, they should scourge him and crucify him, according to the words of the angel which spake it unto me. And after they have hardened their hearts and stiffened their necks against the Holy one of Israel, behold the judgments of the Holy One of Israel shall come upon them. And the day cometh that they shall be smitten and afflicted. Wherefore, after they are driven to and fro, for thus saith the angel, many shall be afflicted in the flesh and shall not be

suffered to perish, because of the prayers of the faithful, they shall be scattered, and smitten and hated; nevertheless, the Lord will be merciful unto them, that *when they shall come to the knowledge of their Redeemer, they shall be gathered together again to the land of their inheritance.*

2 Nephi vi. 1. And now my beloved brethren, I have read these things that ye might know concerning the covenants of the Lord; that he has covenanted with all the house of Israel; that he has spoken unto the Jews, by the mouth of his holy prophets, even from the beginning down, from generation to generation, *until the time comes that they shall be restored to the true church and fold of God; when they shall be gathered home to the lands of their inheritance, and shall be established in all their lands of promise.*

2. Nephi vii. 2. But behold, thus saith the Lord God: *When the day cometh that they shall believe in me, that I am Christ, THEN have I covenanted with their fathers that they shall be restored in the flesh, upon the earth, unto the lands of their inheritance.* And it shall come to pass that they shall be gathered in from their long dispersion from the isles of the sea, and from the four parts of the earth; and the nations of the

Gentiles shall be great in the eyes of me, saith God, in carrying them forth to the land of their inheritance. Yea, the kings of the Gentiles shall be nursing fathers unto them, and their queens shall become nursing mothers; wherefore the promises of the Lord are great unto the Gentiles, for he hath spoken it, and who can dispute? But behold, this land, saith God, shall be a land of thine inheritance; and the Gentiles shall be blest upon the land. And this land shall be a land of liberty unto the Gentiles: and there shall be no kings upon the land, who shall raise up unto the Gentiles. And I will fortify this land against all other nations; and he that fighteth against Zion shall perish, saith God: for he that raiseth up a king against me, shall perish. For I the Lord, the King of heaven, will be their king; and I will be a light unto them forever, that hear my words.

2 Nephi xi. 2. And behold it shall come to pass, that after the Messiah hath risen from the dead, and hath manifested himself unto his people, unto as many as will believe on his name, behold, Jerusalem shall be destroyed again: for woe unto them that fight against God and the people of his church. Wherefore, the Jews shall be

scattered among all nations; yea, and also Babylon shall be destroyed; wherefore, the Jews shall be scattered by other nations; and after they have been scattered, and the Lord God hath scourged them by other nations, for the space of many generations, yea even down from generation to generation, *until they shall be persuaded to believe in Christ, the Son of God, and the atonement, which is infinite for all mankind*; and when that day shall come, *that they shall believe in Christ, and worship the Father in his name, with pure hearts, and clean hands, and look not forward any more for another Messiah, then, at that time*, the day will come that it must needs be expedient that they should believe these things, and the Lord will set his hand again the second time to restore his people from their lost and fallen state. Wherefore, he will proceed to do a marvelous work and a wonder among the children of men.

B. of C. civ. 12. The twelve are a travelling, presiding high council, to officiate in the name of the Lord, under the direction of the presidency of the church, agreeably to the institution of heaven, to build up the church and regulate all the affairs of the same, in all nations; first unto the Gentiles, and *secondly unto the Jews.*

13. The seventy are to act in the name of the Lord, under the direction of the twelve, or the traveling high council, in building up the church, and regulating all the affairs of the same, in all nations; first unto the Gentiles, and then *to the Jews*; the twelve being sent out, holding the keys to open the door by the proclamation of the gospel of Jesus Christ; and first unto the Gentiles, *and then unto the Jews*.

Isa. v. 26. And he will lift up an ensign to the nations from far, and will hiss unto them from the end of the earth; and, behold, they shall come with speed swiftly.

Isa. xi. 11. And it shall come to pass in that day that the Lord shall set his hand again the second time to recover the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Cush, and from Elam, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the islands of the sea.

12. And he shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth.

13. The envy also of Ephraim shall depart, and the adversaries of Judah shall be cut off: Ephraim shall not envy Judah, and Judah shall not vex Ephraim.

14. But they shall fly upon the shoulders of the Philistines toward the west; they shall spoil them of the east together; they shall lay their hand upon Edom and Moab; and the children of Amon shall obey them.

Deut. xxx. 1. And it shall come to pass, when all these things are come upon thee, the blessing and the curse, which I have set before thee, and thou shalt call them to mind among all the nations whither the Lord thy God hath driven thee,

2. And shalt return unto the Lord thy God, and shalt obey his voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children, with all thy heart, and with all thy soul;

3. That then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity, and have compassion upon thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations whither the Lord thy God hath scattered thee.

4. If any of thine be driven out unto the outmost parts of heaven, from thence will the Lord thy God gather thee, and from thence will he fetch thee:

5. And the Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed, and thou shalt possess it: and he will do thee good, and multiply thee above thy fathers.

Jer. xxix. 10. For thus saith the Lord, That after seventy years be accomplished at Babylon I will visit you, and perform my good word toward you, in causing you to return to this place.

11. For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, saith the Lord, thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end.

12. Then shall ye call upon me, and ye shall go and pray unto me, and I will hearken unto you.

13. And ye shall seek and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart.

14. And I will be found of you, saith the Lord : and I will turn away your captivity, and I will gather you from all the nations, and from all the places whither I have driven you, saith the Lord ; and I will bring you again into the place whence I caused you to be carried away captive.

Jer. xxxi. 6. For there shall be a day, that the watchmen upon the mount Ephraim shall cry, Arise ye, and let us go up to Zion unto the Lord our God.

7. For thus saith the Lord ; Sing with gladness for Jacob, and shout among the chief of the nations : publish ye, praise ye, and say, O Lord, save thy people, the remnant of Israel.

8. Behold, I will bring them from the north country, and gather them from the coasts of the earth, and with them the blind and the lame, the woman with child and her that travaileth with child together: a great company shall return thither.

9. They shall come with weeping, and with supplications will I lead them: I will cause them to walk by the rivers of waters in a straight way, wherein they shall not stumble; for I am a father to Israel, and Ephraim is my first born.

Ezek. xx. 33. As I live, saith the Lord God, surely with a mighty hand, and with a stretched-out arm, and with fury poured out, will I rule over you:

34. And I will bring you out from the people, and will gather you out of the countries wherein ye are scattered, with a mighty hand, and with a stretched-out arm, and with fury poured out.

35. And I will bring you into the wilderness of the people, and there will I plead with you face to face.

36. Like as I pleaded with your fathers in the wilderness of the land of Eygypt, so will I plead with you, saith the Lord God.

37. And I will cause you to pass under the rod, and I will bring you into the bond of the covenant:

38. And I will purge out from among you the rebels, and them that transgress against me: I will bring them forth out of the country where they sojourn, and they shall not enter into the land of Israel: and ye shall know that I am the Lord.

39. As for you, O house of Israel, thus saith the Lord God; Go ye, serve ye every one his idols, and hereafter also, if ye will not hearken unto me: but pollute ye my holy name no more with your gifts, and with your idols.

40. For in my holy mountain, in the mountain of the height of Israel, saith the Lord God, there shall all the house of Israel, all of them in the land, serve me: there will I accept them, and there will I require your offerings, and the first-fruits of your oblations, with all your holy things.

41. I will accept you with your sweet savor, when I bring you out from the people, and gather you out of the countries wherein ye have been scattered; and I will be sanctified in you before the heathen.

Zech. xii. 9. And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will seek to destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem.

10. And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jeru-

salem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his first-born.

11. In that day there shall be a great mourning in Jerusalem, as the mourning of Hadadrimmon in the valley of Megiddon.

12. And the land shall mourn, every family apart; the family of the house of David apart, and their wives apart; the family of the house of Nathan apart, and their wives apart:

13. The family of the house of Levi apart, and their wives apart; the family of Shimei apart, and their wives apart;

14. All the families that remain, every family apart, and their wives apart.

Zech. xiii. 1. In that day there shall be a fountain opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness.

Rom. xi. 10. Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back always.

11. I say then have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy.

12. Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles : how much more their fullness ?

13. For I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine office :

14. If by any means I may provoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might save some of them.

15. For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead ?

16. For if the first fruit be holy, the lump is also holy : and if the root be holy, so are the branches.

17. And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive-tree, wert grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive-tree ;

18. Boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

19. Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.

20. Well ; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high-minded, but fear ;

23. For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.

22. Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God : on them which fell, severity ; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness : otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

23. And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in : for God is able to graff them in again.

24. For if thou wert cut out of the olive-tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive-tree ; how much more shall these, which be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree ?

25. For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, (lest ye should be wise in your own conceits) that blindness in part is happened unto Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.

26. And so all Israel shall be saved : as it is written, There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob :

27. For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins.

Jer. L. 4. In those days, and in that time, saith the Lord, the children of Israel

shall come, they and the children of Judah together, going and weeping: they shall go, and seek the Lord their God.

5. They shall ask the way to Zion with their faces thitherward, saying, Come and let us join ourselves to the Lord in a perpetual covenant that shall not be forgotten.

Lev. xxvi. 39. And they that are left of you shall pine away in their iniquity in your enemies' lands; and also in the iniquities of their fathers shall they pine away with them.

40. If they shall confess their iniquity, and the iniquity of their fathers, with their tresspass which they tresspassed against me, and that also they have walked contrary unto me;

41. And that I also have walked contrary unto them, and have brought them into the land of their enemies: if then their uncircumcised hearts be humbled, and they then accept of the punishment of their iniquity:

42. Then will I remember my covenant with Jacob, and also my covenant with Isaac, and also my covenant with Abraham will I remember; and I will remember the land.

Neh. i. 8. Remember, I beseech thee, the word that thou commandedst thy ser-

vant Moses, saying, If ye transgress, I will scatter you abroad among the nations:

9. But if ye turn unto me, and keep my commandments, and do them; though there were of you cast out unto the uttermost part of the heaven, yet will I gather them from thence, and will bring them unto the place that I have chosen to set my name there.

Deut. iv. 25. When thou shalt beget children, and children's children, and ye shall have remained long in the land, and shall corrupt yourselves, and make a graven image, or the likeness of any thing, and shall do evil in the sight of the Lord thy God, to provoke him to anger:

26. I call heaven and earth to witness against you this day, that ye shall soon utterly perish from off the land whereunto ye go over Jordan to possess it; ye shall not prolong your days upon it, but shall utterly be destroyed.

27. And the Lord shall scatter you among the nations, and ye shall be left few in number among the heathen whither the Lord shall lead you.

28. And there ye shall serve gods, the work of men's hands, wood and stone, which neither see, nor hear, nor eat, nor smell.

29. But if from thence thou shalt seek the Lord thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart, and with all thy soul.

30. When thou art in tribulation, and all these things are come upon thee, even in the latter days, if thou turn to the Lord thy God, and shalt be obedient unto his voice.

31. (For the Lord thy God is a merciful God;) he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he sware unto them.

Isa. xxxii. 13. Upon the land of my people shall come up thorns and briers; yea, upon all the houses of joy in the joyous city:

14. Because the palaces shall be forsaken; the multitude of the city shall be left; the forts and towers shall be for dens for ever, a joy of wild asses, a pasture of flocks;

15. Until the spirit be poured upon us from on high, and the wilderness be a fruitful field, and the fruitful field be counted for a forest.

16. Then judgment shall dwell in the wilderness, and righteousness remain in the fruitful field.

17. And the work of righteousness

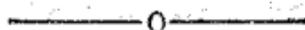
shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance for ever.

18. And my people shall dwell in a peaceable habitation, and in sure dwellings and in quiet resting places;

Jer. xvi. 14. Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that it shall no more be said, The Lord liveth, that brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt;

15. But, the Lord liveth, that brought up the children of Israel from the land of the north, and from all the lands whither he had driven them: and I will bring them again into their land I gave unto their fathers.

16. Behold, I will send for many fishers, saith the Lord, and they shall fish them: and after will I send for many hunters, and they shall hunt them from every mountain, and from every hill, and out of the holes of the rocks.



DESTRUCTION OF THE WICKED.

Ps. cxlix. 5. Let the saints be joyful in glory: let them sing aloud upon their beds.

6. Let the high praises of God be in their mouth, and a two-edged sword in their hand;

7. To execute vengeance upon the heathen, and punishments upon the people ;

8. To bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron ;

9. To execute upon them the judgment written: this honor have all his saints.

Isa. xxviii. 16. Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste.

17. Judgment also will I lay to the line, and righteousness to the plummet: and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place.

18. And your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then ye shall be trodden down by it.

19. From the time that it goeth forth it shall take you: for morning by morning shall it pass over, by day and by night: and it shall be a vexation only to understand the report.

20. For the bed is shorter than that a man can stretch himself on it: and the covering narrower than that he can wrap himself in it.

21. For the Lord shall rise up as in mount *Perazim*, he shall be wroth as in the valley of *Gibeon*, that he may do his work, his strange work; and bring to pass his act, his strange act.

22. Now therefore be ye not mockers, lest your bands be made strong: for I have heard from the Lord God of hosts a consumption, even determined upon the whole earth.

2 Sam. v. 19. And David enquired of the Lord, saying, Shall I go up to the Philistines? wilt thou deliver them into mine hand? And the Lord said unto David, Go up: for I will doubtless deliver the Philistines into thine hand.

20. And David came to *Baal-perazim*, and smote them there, and said, The Lord hath broken forth upon mine enemies before me, as the breach of waters. Therefore he called the name of that place *Baal-perazim*.

Josh. x. 5. Therefore the five kings of the Amorites, the king of Jerusalem, the king of Hebron, the king of Jarmuth, the king of Lachish, the king of Eglon, gathered themselves together, and went up, they and all their hosts, and encamped before Gideon, and made war against it.

6. And the men of *Gibeon* sent unto

Joshua to the camp to Gilgal, saying, Slack not thy hand from thy servants; come up to us quickly, and save us, and help us: for all the kings of the Amorites that dwell in the mountains are gathered together against us.

7. So Joshua ascended from Gilgal, he, and all the people of war with him, and all the mighty men of valour.

8. And the Lord said unto Joshua, Fear them not: for I have delivered them into thy hand; there shall not a man of them stand before thee.

9. Joshua therefore came unto them suddenly, and went up from Gilgal all night.

10. And the Lord discomfitted them before Israel, and slew them with a great slaughter at Gibeon, and chased them along the way that goeth up to Beth-horon; and smote them to Azekah, and unto Makkedah.

11. And it came to pass, as they fled from before Israel, and were in the going down to Beth-horon, that the Lord cast down great stones from heaven upon them unto Azekah, and they died; they were more which died with hail-stones than they whom the children of Israel slew with the sword.

12. Then spake Joshua to the Lord, in

the day when the Lord delivered up the Amorites before the children of Israel, and he said in the sight of Israel, Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon; and thou, Moon, in the valley of Ajalon.

13. And the sun stood still, and the moon stayed, until the people had avenged themselves upon their enemies. Is not this written in the book of Jasher? So the sun stood still in the midst of heaven, and hasted not to go down about a whole day.

14. And there was no day like that before it or after it, that the Lord hearkened unto the voice of a man; for the Lord fought for Israel.

Jer. iv. 5. Declare ye in Judah, and publish in Jerusalem; and say, Blow ye the trumpet in the land: cry, gather together, and say, Assemble yourselves, and let us go into the defenced cities.

6. Set up the standard toward Zion: retire, stay not: for I will bring evil from the north, and a great destruction.

7. The lion is come up from his thicket, and the destroyer of the Gentiles is on his way; he has gone forth from his place to make thy land desolate; and thy cities shall be laid waste, without an inhabitant.

8. For this gird you with sackcloth, la-

ment and howl: for the fierce anger of the Lord is not turned back from us.

9. And it shall come to pass at that day, saith the Lord, that the heart of the king shall perish, and the heart of the princes; and the priests shall be astonished, and the prophets shall wonder;

Isa. xi. 4. But with righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked.

5. And righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins.

Jer. xxv. 31. A noise shall come even to the ends of the earth; for the Lord hath a controversy with the nations, he will plead with all flesh; he will give them that are wicked to the sword, saith the Lord.

32. Thus saith the Lord of hosts, Behold, evil shall go forth from nation to nation, and a great whirlwind shall be raised up from the coasts of the earth.

33. And the slain of the Lord shall be at that day from one end of the earth even unto the other end of the earth: they shall not be lamented, neither gathered, nor buried; they shall be dung upon the ground.

Rev. xix. 11. And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse: and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True; and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.

12. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns and he had a name written that no man knew but he himself:

13. And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God.

14. And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

15. And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations; and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the wine press of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

16. And he hath on his vesture, and on his thigh a name written, King of kings, and Lord of lords.

17. And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God;

18. That ye may eat the flesh of kings,

and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

19. And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

20. And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21. And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth; and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

Ezek. xxxviii. 14. Therefore, son of man, prophesy and say unto Gog, Thus saith the Lord God; In that day, when my people Israel dwelleth safely, shalt thou not know it?

15. And thou shalt come from thy place out of the north parts, thou, and many people with thee, all of them riding upon horses, a great company, and a mighty army:

16. And thou shalt come up against

my people of Israel, as a cloud to cover the land; it shall be in the latter days, and I will bring thee against my land, that the heathen may know me, when I shall be sanctified in thee, O Gog, before their eyes.

17. Thus saith the Lord God; Art thou he of whom I have spoken in old time by my servants the prophets of Israel, which prophesied in those days many years, that I would bring thee against them?

18. And it shall come to pass at the same time when Gog shall come against the land of Israel, saith the Lord God, that my fury shall come up in my face.

19. For in my jealousy and in the fire of my wrath have I spoken, Surely in that day there shall be a great shaking in the land of Israel;

20. So that the fishes of the sea, and the fowls of the heaven, and the beasts of the field, and all creeping things that creep upon the earth, and all the men that are upon the face of the earth, shall shake at my presence, and the mountains shall be thrown down, and the steep places shall fall, and every wall shall fall to the ground.

21. And I will call for a sword against him throughout all my mountains, saith the Lord God: every man's sword shall be against his brother.

22. And I will plead against him with pestilence and with blood; and I will rain upon him, and upon his bands, and upon the many people that are with him, an overflowing rain, and great hailstones, fire and brimstone.

23. Thus will I magnify myself, and sanctify myself; I will be known in the eyes of many nations, and they shall know that I am the Lord.

Zech. xii 1. The burden of the word of the Lord for Israel, saith the Lord, which stretcheth forth the heavens, and layeth the foundation of the earth, and formeth the spirit of man within him.

2. Behold, I will make Jerusalem a cup of trembling unto all the people round about, when they shall be in the siege both against Judah and against Jerusalem.

3. And in that day will I make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people: all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth be gathered together against it.

4. In that day, saith the Lord, I will smite every horse with astonishment, and his rider with madness: and I will open mine eyes upon the house of Judah, and will smite every horse of the people with blindness.

5. And the governors of Judah shall say in their heart, The inhabitants of Jerusalem shall be my strength in the Lord of hosts their God.

6. In that day will I make the governors of Judah like an hearth of fire among the wood, and like a torch of fire in a sheaf; and they shall devour all the people round about; on the right hand and on the left; and Jerusalem shall be inhabited again in her own place, even in Jerusalem.

7. The Lord also shall save the tents of Judah first, that the glory of the house of David, and the glory of the inhabitants of Jerusalem do not magnify themselves against Judah.

8. In that day shall the Lord defend the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and he that is feeble among them at that day shall be as David; and the house of David shall be as God, as the angel of the Lord before them.

9. And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will seek to destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem.

Zech. xiv. 1. Behold, the day of the Lord cometh, and thy spoil shall be divided in the midst of thee.

2. For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle; and the city shall be

taken, and the houses rifled, and the women ravished; and half of the city shall go into captivity, and the residue of the people shall not be cut off from the city.

3. Then shall the Lord go forth, and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the day of battle.

4. And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south.

5. And ye shall flee to the valley of the mountains; for the valley of the mountains shall reach unto Azal: yea, ye shall flee like as ye fled from before the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah; and the Lord my God shall come, and all the saints with thee. * * *

12. And this shall be the plague wherewith the Lord will smite all the people that have fought against Jerusalem; Their flesh shall consume away while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall consume away in their holes, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth.

13. And it shall come to pass in that

day, that a great tumult from the Lord shall be among them; and they shall lay hold every one on the hand of his neighbor, and his hand shall rise up against the hand of his neighbor.

14. And Judah also shall fight at Jerusalem; and the wealth of all the heathen round about shall be gathered together, gold, and silver, and apparel, in great abundance.

Joel ii. 1. Blow ye the trumpet in Zion, and sound an alarm in my holy mountain: let all the inhabitants of the land tremble: for the day of the Lord cometh, for it is nigh at hand;

2. A day of darkness and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick darkness, as the morning spread upon the mountains: a great *people* and a strong; there hath not been ever the like, neither shall there be any more after it, even to the years of many generations.

3. A fire devoureth before them; and behind them a flame burneth: the land is as the garden of Eden before them, and behind them a desolate wilderness; yea, and nothing shall escape them.

4. The appearance of them is as the appearance of *horses*; and as *horsemen* so shall they run.

5. Like the noise of chariots on the tops of the mountains shall they leap, like the noise of a flame of fire that devoureth the stubble, as a strong people set in battle-array.

6. Before their face the people shall be much pained : all faces shall gather blackness.

7. They shall run like mighty men ; they shall climb the wall like men of war ; and they shall march every one on his ways, and they shall not break their ranks :

8. Neither shall one thrust another ; they shall walk every one in his path : and when they fall upon the sword, they shall not be wounded.

9. They shall run to and fro in the city ; they shall run upon the wall, they shall climb up upon the houses ; they shall enter in at the windows like a thief.

10. The earth shall quake before them ; the heavens shall tremble : the sun and the moon shall be dark, and the stars shall withdraw their shining :

11. And the Lord shall utter his voice before his army : for his camp is very great : for he is strong that executeth his word : for the day of the Lord is great and very terrible ; and who can abide it.

Rev. xiv. 8. And there followed an-

other angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

Jer. l. 1. The word that the Lord spake against Babylon and against the land of the Chaldeans by Jeremiah the prophet.

2. Declare ye among the nations, and publish and set up a standard; publish, and conceal not: say, Babylon is taken, Bel is confounded, Merodach is broken in pieces; her idols are confounded, her images are broken in pieces.

Rev. xviii. 4. And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.

Jer. l. 3. For out of the north there cometh up a nation against her, which shall make her land desolate, and none shall dwell therein: they shall remove, they shall depart, both man and beast.

4. In those days, and in that time, saith the Lord, the children of Israel shall come, they and the children of Judah together, going and weeping: they shall go, and seek the Lord their God.

5. They shall ask the way to Zion with their faces thitherward, saying, Come and

let us join ourselves to the Lord in a perpetual covenant that shall not be forgotten.

6. My people hath been lost sheep: their shepherds have caused them to go astray, they have turned them away on the mountains: they have gone from mountain to hill, they have forgotten their resting-place.

7. All that found them have devoured them: and their adversaries said, We offend not, because they have sinned against the Lord, the habitation of justice, even the Lord, the hope of their fathers.

8. Remove out of the midst of Babylon, and go forth out of the land of the Chaldeans, and be as the he-goats before the flocks.

Rev. xviii. 5. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

6. Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double.

7. How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

Jer. l. 9. For lo, I will raise and cause to

come up against Babylon an assembly of great nations from the north country : and they shall set themselves in array against her ; from thence she shall be taken : their arrows shall be as of a mighty expert man ; none shall return in vain.

10. And Chaldea shall be a spoil : all that spoil her shall be satisfied, saith the Lord.

11. Because ye were glad, because ye rejoiced, O ye destroyers of mine heritage, because ye are grown fat as the heifer at grass, and bellow as bulls ;

12. Your mother shall be sore confounded ; she that bare you shall be ashamed : behold the hindermost of the nations shall be a wilderness, a dry land, and a desert.

13. Because of the wrath of the Lord it shall not be inhabited, but it shall be wholly desolate : every one that goeth by Babylon shall be astonished, and hiss at all her plagues.

14. Put yourselves in array against Babylon round about : all ye that bend the bow, shoot at her, spare no arrows : for she hath sinned against the Lord.

15. Shout against her round about : she hath given her hand : her foundations are fallen, her walls are thrown down : for

it is the vengeance of the Lord : take vengeance upon her ; as she hath done, do unto her.

16. Cut off the sower from Babylon, and him that handleth the sickle in the time of harvest : for fear of the oppressing sword they shall turn every one to his people, and they shall flee every one to his own land.

Jer. L. 24. I have laid a snare for thee, and thou art also taken, O Babylon, and thou wast not aware : thou art found, and also caught, because thou hast striven against the Lord.

25. The Lord hath opened his armory, and hath brought forth the weapons of his indignation : for this is the work of the Lord God of hosts in the land of the Chaldeans.

26. Come against her from the utmost border, open her storehouses : cast her up as heaps, and destroy her utterly : let nothing of her be left.

27. Slay all her bullocks ; let them go down to the slaughter : wo unto them for their day is come, the time of their visitation.

28. The voice of them that flee and escape out of the land of Babylon, to declare in Zion the vengeance of the Lord our God, the vengeance of his temple.

29. Call together the archers against Babylon; all ye that bend the bow, camp against it round about; let none thereof escape: recompense her according to her work; according to all that she hath done, do unto her: for she hath been proud against the Lord, against the Holy One of Israel.

30. Therefore shall her young men fall in the streets, and all her men of war shall be cut off in that day, saith the Lord.

31. Behold, I am against thee, O thou most proud, saith the Lord God of hosts: for thy day is come, the time that I will visit thee.

Rev. xviii. 18. And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great city!

19. And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas! that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate.

20. Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her.

21. And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great mill-stone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that

great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.

Jer. L. 32. And the most proud shall stumble and fall, and none shall raise him up: and I will kindle a fire in his cities, and it shall devour all round about him.

33. Thus saith the Lord of hosts; The children of Israel and the children of Judah were oppressed together: and all that took them captives, held them fast; they refused to let them go.

Rev. xviii. 8. Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.

Jer. L. 34. Their Redemer is strong; the Lord of hosts is his name: he shall thoroughly plead their cause, that he may give rest to the land, and disquiet the inhabitants of Babylon.

35. A sword is upon the Chaldeans, saith the Lord, and upon the inhabitants of Babylon, and upon her princes, and upon her wise men.

36. A sword is upon the liars; and they shall dote: a sword is upon her mighty men; and they shall be dismayed.

37. A sword is upon their horses, and upon their chariots, and upon all the min-

gled people that are in the midst of her; and they shall become as women: a sword is upon her treasures; and they shall be robbed.

Jer. xlix. 19. Behold, he shall come up like a lion from the swelling of Jordan against the habitation of the strong: but I will suddenly make him run away from her: and who is a chosen man, that I may appoint over her? for who is like me? and who will appoint me the time? and who is that shepherd that will stand before me?

20. Therefore hear the counsel of the Lord, that he hath taken against Edom; and his purposes, that he hath purposed against the inhabitants of Teman: Surely the least of the flock shall draw them out: surely he shall make their habitations desolate with them.

21. The earth is moved at the noise of their fall, at the cry the noise thereof was heard in the Red Sea.

Jer. l. 41. Behold, a people shall come from the north, and a great nation, and many kings shall be raised up from the coasts of the earth.

42. They shall hold the bow and the lance; they are cruel, and will not shew mercy: their voice shall roar like the sea, and they shall ride upon horses, every one

put in array, like a man to the battle, against thee, O daughter of Babylon.

43. The king of Babylon hath heard the report of them, and his hands waxed feeble: anguish took hold of him, and pangs as of a woman in travail.

44. Behold, he shall come up like a lion from the swelling of Jordan unto the habitation of the strong: but I will make them suddenly run away from her: and who is a chosen man that I may appoint over her? for who is like me? and who will appoint me the time? and who is that shepherd that will stand before me?

45. Therefore hear ye the counsel of the Lord that he hath taken against Babylon; and his purposes, that he hath purposed against the land of the Chaldeans: surely the least of the flock shall draw them out: surely he shall make their habitation desolate with them.

46. At the noise of the taking of Babylon the earth is moved, and the cry is heard among the nations.

Jer. L. 28. The voice of them that flee and escape out of the land of Babylon, to declare in Zion the vengeance of the Lord our God, the vengeance of his temple.

Jer. Li. 1. Thus saith the Lord; Behold, I will raise up against Bebylon, and against

them that dwell in the midst of them that rise up against me, a destroying wind ;

2. And I will send unto Babylon, fan-ners that shall fan her, and shall empty her land : for in the day of trouble they shall be against her round about.

3. Against him that bendeth let the archer bend his bow, and against him that lifteth himself up in his brigandine : and spare ye not her young men ; destroy ye utterly all her host.

4. Thus the slain shall fall in the land of the Chaldeans, and they that are thrust through in her streets.

5. For Israel hath not been forsaken, nor Judah of his God, of the Lord of hosts ; though their land was filled with sin against the Holy One of Israel.

6. Flee out of the midst of Babylon, and deliver every man his soul : be not cut off in her iniquity ; for this is the time of the Lord's vengeance ; he will render unto her a recompense.

7. Babylon hath been a golden cup in the Lord's hand, that made all the earth drunken : the nations have drunken of her wine ; therefore the nations are mad.

8. Babylon is suddenly fallen and destroyed : howl for her ; take balm for her pain, if so be she may be healed,

9. We would have healed Babylon, but she is not healed : forsake her, and let us go every one to his own country : for her judgment reacheth unto heaven, and is lifted up even to the skies.

10. The Lord hath brought forth our righteousness : come, and let us declare in Zion the work of the Lord our God.

11. Make bright the arrows ; gather the shields : the Lord hath raised up the spirit of the kings of the Medes : for his device is against Babylon, to destroy it because it is the vengeance of the Lord, the vengeance of his temple. * * *

19. The portion of Jacob is not like them ; for he is the former of all things : and Israel is the rod of his inheritance : the Lord of hosts is his name.

20. Thou art my battle-axe, and weapons of war : for with thee will I break in pieces the nations, and with thee will I destroy kingdoms ;

21. And with thee will I break in pieces the horse and his rider ; and with thee will I break in pieces the chariot and his rider.

22. With thee also will I break in pieces man and woman ; and with thee will I break in pieces old and young ; and with thee will I break in pieces the young man and the maid ;

23. I will also break in pieces with thee the shepherd and his flock; and with thee will I break in pieces the husbandman and his yoke of oxen; and with thee will I break in pieces captains and rulers.

24. And I will render unto Babylon and to all the inhabitants of Chaldea all their evil that they have done in Zion in your sight, saith the Lord. * * *

33. For thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; The daughter of Babylon is like a threshing-floor, it is time to thresh her: yet a little while, and the time of her harvest shall come.

34. Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon hath devoured me, he hath crushed me, he hath made me an empty vessel, he hath swallowed me up like a dragon, he hath filled his belly with my delicates, he hath cast me out.

35. The violence done to me, and to my flesh be upon Babylon, shall the inhabitant of Zion say; and, My blood upon the inhabitants of Chaldea, shall Jerusalem say.

36. Therefore thus saith the Lord; Behold, I will plead thy cause, and take vengeance for thee; and I will dry up her sea, and make her springs dry.

47. Therefore behold, the days come,

that I will do judgment upon the graven images of Babylon: and her whole land shall be confounded, and all her slain shall fall in the midst of her.

48. Then the heaven and the earth, and all that is therein, shall sing for Babylon: for the spoilers shall come unto her from the north, saith the Lord.

—o—

DISPERSION OF THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL AND JUDAH.

Note to the Reader.—Much information can be obtained concerning this subject from various passages inserted under "Gathering of Israel."

Deut. iv. 27. And the Lord shall scatter ye among the nations, and ye shall be left few in number among the heathen, whither the Lord shall lead you.

Deut. xxviii. 25. The Lord shall cause thee to be smitten before thine enemies: thou shalt go out one way against them, and flee seven ways before them; and shalt be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth. * * * * *

36. The Lord shall bring thee, and thy king which thou shalt set over thee, unto a nation which neither thou nor thy fathers have known: and there shalt thou serve other gods, wood and stone.

1 Kings xiv. 15, For the Lord shall

smite Israel as a reed is shaken in the water, and he shall root up Israel out of this good land which he gave to their fathers, and shall scatter them beyond the river, because they have made their groves, provoking the Lord to anger.

Isa. vi. 9. And he said, Go, and tell this people, Hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not.

10. Make the heart of this people fat, and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes; lest they see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and convert, and be healed.

11. Then said I, Lord, how long? And he answered, Until the cities be wasted without inhabitant, and the houses without man, and the land be utterly desolate,

12. And the Lord have removed men far away, and there be a great forsaking in the midst of the land.

13. But yet in it shall be a tenth, and it shall return, and shall be eaten: as a teil tree, and as an oak, whose substance is in them, when they cast their leaves: so the holy seed shall be the substance thereof.

Jer. ix. 16. I will scatter them also among the heathen, whom neither they nor their fathers have known: and I will send a

sword after them till I have consumed them.

See Jer. xvi. 16; xvii. 4, 19-27; xix. 6-9; Lev. xxvi. 14-39; Ezek. xii. c.; Jer. xlvi. 28.

Jer. xxiv. 9. And I will deliver them to be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth for their hurt, to be a reproach and a proverb, a taunt and a curse, in all places whither I shall drive them.

Jer. xxxiv. 17. Therefore thus saith the Lord; Ye have not hearkened unto me, in proclaiming liberty, every one to his brother, and every man to his neighbor: behold, I proclaim a liberty for you, saith the Lord, to the sword, to the pestilence, and to the famine; and I will make you to be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth.

Zech. vii. 14. But I scattered them with a whirlwind among all the nations whom they knew not. Thus the land was desolate after them, that no man passed through nor returned: for they laid the pleasant land desolate.

Deut. xxviii. 53. And thou shalt eat the fruit of thine own body, the flesh of thy sons and of thy daughters, which the Lord thy God hath given thee, in the seige, and in the straightness, wherewith thine enemies shall distress thee:

54. So that the man that is tender among you, and very delicate, his eye shall be evil toward his brother, and toward the wife of his bosom, and toward the remnant of his children which he shall leave :

55. So that he will not give to any of them of the flesh of his children whom he shall eat : because he hath nothing left him in the seige, and in the straightness, wherewith thine enemies shall distress thee in all thy gates.

56. The tender and delicate woman among you, which would not adventure to set the sole of her foot upon the ground for delicateness and tenderness, her eye shall be evil toward the husband of her bosom, and toward her son, and toward her daughter,

57. And toward her young one that cometh out from between her feet, and toward her children which she shall bear : for she shall eat them for want of all things secretly in the siege and straightness, wherewith thy enemy shall distress thee in thy gates.

Matt. xxiv. 1. And Jesus went out and departed from the temple : and his disciples came to him for to show him the buildings of the temple.

2. And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. * * * *

15. When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth let him understand :)

16. Then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains :

17. Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take anything out of his house :

18. Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes.

19. And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days !

20. But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day :

21. For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

22. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved : but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

See Mark xiii. 1, 2, 14-20.

Matt. xxi. 44. And whosoever shall fall

on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

Luke xiii 34. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not!

35. Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

See Matt. xxiii. 36, 39.

Luke xix. 41. And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it,

42. Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong to thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

43. For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and keep thee on every side,

44. And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

Luke xxi. 20. And when ye shall see

Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.

21. Then let them which are in Judea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto.

22. For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

23. But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people.

24. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

Rom. xi. 7. What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded,

8. (According as it is written, God hath given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear;) unto this day.

9. And David saith, Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling-block, and a recompence unto them:

10. Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back alway.

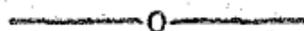
11. I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy.

12. Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fulness?

13. For I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles I magnify mine office:

14. If by any means I may provoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might save some of them.

15. For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world, what shall the receiving of them be but life from the dead.



DIVINITY OF CHRIST.

(A FEW TEXTS ONLY.)

Isa. ix. 6. For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsel-

lor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

Isa. vii. 14. Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel.

See also Mat. i. 20-23.

Ps. cx. 1. The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool.

Mat. xxii. 41. While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,

42. Saying, What think ye of Christ? Whose son is he? They say unto him, The son of David.

43. He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,

44. The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool?

45. If David then call him Lord, how is he his son?

46. And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man, from that day forth, ask him any more questions.

Dan. iii. 25. He answered and said, Lo, I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire, and they have no hurt; and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God.

John i. 1. In the beginning was the

Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

2. The same was in the beginning with God.

3. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.

4. In him was life; and the life was the light of men.

5. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.

6. There was a man sent from God, whose name was John.

7. The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all men through him might believe.

8. He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light.

9. That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

10. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

11. He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

12. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name;

13. Which were born, not of blood, nor

of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14. And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

Phil. ii. 5. Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:

6. Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God.

Col. i. 15. Who is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of every creature:

16. For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him:

17. And he is before all things, and by him all things consist,

18. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the first-born from the dead; that in all things he might have the pre-eminence.

19. For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell.

Col. ii. 9. For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.

10. And ye are complete in him, which

is the head of all principality and power.

Heb i. 1. God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in times past unto the fathers by the prophets,

2. Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds;

3. Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;

4. Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.

5. For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?

6. And again, when he bringeth in the first-begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.

7. And of the angels he saith, Who maketh the angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire.

8. But unto the Son, he saith, Thy throne, O God, is forever and ever: a

sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom;

9. Thou hast loved righteousness and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.

Jude i. 25. To the only wise God our Savior, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.

Rev. i. 6. And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion forever and ever. Amen.

ENSIGN FOR THE GATHERING OF ISRAEL.

Isa. v. 26. And he will lift up an ensign to the nations from far, and will hiss unto them from the end of the earth: and behold, they shall come with speed swiftly.

See also 27-31 v.

Isa. xviii. 1. Woe to the land shadowing with wings, which is beyond the rivers of Ethiopia,

2. That sendeth ambassadors by the sea, even in vessels of bulrushes upon the waters, saying, Go, ye swift messengers, to a nation scattered and peeled, to a people terrible from their beginning hitherto;

a nation meted out and trodden down, whose land the rivers have spoiled!

3. All ye inhabitants of the world, and dwellers on the earth, see ye, when he lifeth up an ensign on the mountains; and when he bloweth a trumpet, hear ye.

See also 4-7 v.

Isa. xi. 10. And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious.

11. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall set his hand again the second time to recover the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Cush, and from Elam, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the islands of the sea.

12. And he shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth.

See the context.

Isa. xxxi. 6 Turn ye unto him from whom the children of Israel have deeply revolted.

7. For in that day every man shall cast away his idols of silver, and his idols of

gold, which your own hands have made unto you for a sin.

8. Then shall the Assyrian fall with the sword, not of a mighty man; and the sword, not of a mean man, shall devour him: but he shall flee from the sword, and his young men shall be discomfited.

9. And he shall pass over to his strong hold for fear, and his princes shall be afraid of the ensign, saith the Lord, whose fire is in Zion, and his furnace in Jerusalem.

Zech. ix. 16. And the Lord their God shall save them in that day as the flock of his people: for they shall be as the stones of a crown, lifted up as an ensign upon his land.

Isa. xlix. 22. Thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I will lift up mine hand to the Gentiles, and set up my standard to the people: and they shall bring thy sons in their arms, and thy daughters shall be carried upon their shoulders.

23. And kings shall be thy nursing fathers, and their queens thy nursing mothers: they shall bow down to thee with their face toward the earth, and lick up the dust of thy feet; and thou shalt know that I am the Lord: for they shall not be ashamed that wait for me.

Jer. xvi. 14. Therefore, behold, the days

come, saith the Lord; that it shall no more be said, The Lord liveth, that brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt;

15. But, The Lord liveth, that brought up the children of Israel from the land of the north, and from all the lands whither he had driven them: and I will bring them again into their land that I gave unto their fathers.

16. Behold, I will send for many fishers, saith the Lord, and they shall fish them: and after will I send for many hunters, and they shall hunt them from every mountain, and from every hill, and out of the holes of the rocks.

Matt. iv. 18. And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.

19. And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

Isa. lii. 7. How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth salvation; that saith unto Zion, thy God reigneth!

8. Thy watchman shall lift up the voice; with the voice together shall they sing:

for they shall see eye to eye, when the Lord shall bring again Zion.

9. Break forth into joy, sing together, ye waste places of Jerusalem: for the Lord hath comforted his people, he hath redeemed Jerusalem.

10. The Lord hath made bare his holy arm in the eyes of all the nations; and all the ends of the earth shall see the salvation of our God.

Nah i. 15. Behold upon the mountains the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace! O Judah, keep thy solemn feasts, perform thy vows: for the wicked shall no more pass through thee; he is utterly cut off.

I a. lxxvi. 18. For I know their works and their thoughts; it shall come that I will gather all nations and tongues; and they shall come and see my glory.

19. And I will set a sign among them, and I will send those that escape of them unto the nations, to Tarshish, Pal, and Lud, that draw the bow to Tubal, and Javan, to the isles afar off, that have not heard my fame, neither have seen my glory; and they shall declare my glory among the Gentiles.

20. And they shall bring all your brethren for an offering unto the Lord out of

of all nations upon horses, and in chariots, and in litters, and upon mules, and upon swift beasts, to my holy mountain Jerusalem, saith the Lord, as the children of Israel bring an offering in a clean vessel into the house of the Lord.

21. And I will also take of them for priests and for Levites, saith the Lord.

22. For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before me, saith the Lord, so shall your seed and your name remain.

23. And it shall come to pass, that from one new moon to another, and from one sabbath to another, shall all flesh come to worship before me saith the Lord.

Isa. xxviii. 21. For the Lord shall rise up as in mount Perazim, he shall be wroth as in the valley of Gibeon, that he may do his work, his strange work; and bring to pass his act, his strange act.

Isa. xxix. 13. Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near me with their mouth, and with their lips do honor me, but have removed their heart far from me, and their fear toward me is taught by the precept of men:

14. Therefore, behold, I will proceed to do a marvelous work among this people, even a marvelous work and a wonder:

for the wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid. See the cont xt.

Isa. lxii. 10. Go through, go through the gates; prepare ye the way of the people; cast up, cast up the highway; gather out the stones; lift up a standard for the people.

11. Behold the Lord hath proclaimed unto the end of the world, Say ye to the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy salvation cometh; behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him.

Isa. xl. 9. O Zion, that bringest good tidings, get thee up into the high mountain; O Jerusalem, that bringest good tidings, lift up thy voice with strength; lift it up, be not afraid; say unto the cities of Judah, Behold your God!

10. Behold, the Lord God will come with strong hand, and his arm shall rule for him; behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him.

Isa. liv. 11. O thou afflicted, tossed with tempest, and not comforted, behold, I will lay thy stones with fair colors, and lay thy foundations with sapphires.

12. And I will make thy windows of agates, and thy gates of carbuncles, and all thy borders of pleasant stones,

13. And all thy children shall be taught of the Lord; and great shall be the peace of thy children.

14. In righteousness shalt thou be established; thou shalt be far from oppression; for thou shalt not fear; and from terror; for it shall not come near thee.

15. Behold, they shall surely gather together, but not by me: whosoever shall gather together against thee shall fall for thy sake.

16. Behold, I have created the smith that bloweth the coals in the fire, and that bringeth forth an instrument for his work; and I have created the waster to destroy.

17. No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord, and their righteousness is of me, saith the Lord.

Rom. 11. 25. For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.

26. And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of

Zion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob.

27. For this is my covenant with them, when I shall take away their sins.

Jer. iv. 6. Set up the standard toward Zion: retire, stay not; for I will bring evil from the north, and a great destruction.

7. The lion is come up from his thicket, and the destroyer of the Gentiles is on his way; he is gone forth from his place to make thy land desolate; and thy cities shall be laid waste, without an inhabitant.

Isa. i. 25. And I will turn my hand upon thee, and purely purge away thy dross, and take away all thy tin.

26. And I will restore thy judges as at the first, and thy counsellors as at the beginning: afterward thou shalt be called, The city of righteousness, the faithful city.

Ex. xviii. 24. So Moses hearkened to the voice of his father-in-law, and did all that he had said.

25. And Moses chose able men out of all Israel, and made them heads over the people, rulers of thousands, rulers of hundreds, rulers of fifties, and rulers of tens.

26. And they judged the people at all seasons: the hard causes they brought unto Moses, but every small matter they judged themselves.

Deut. xvi. 18. Judges and officers shalt thou make thee in all thy gates, which the Lord thy God giveth thee, throughout thy tribes: and they shall judge the people with just judgment.

See "Prophets in the Last Days," "Kingdom of God in the Last Days," and "Priesthood."

FALSE PROPHETS.

Note to the Reader—This subject is more or less connected with the "Apostacy from the true church after the days of Christ."

Matt. vii. 15. Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

16. Ye shall know them by their fruits: Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?

17. Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

18. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

19. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

20. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

Matt. xxiv. 23. Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not.

24. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

25. Behold, I have told you before.

26. Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not.

See Mark xiii. 52, also Rev. xvi. 13, 14; do. xix. 20.

2 Pet. iii. 3. Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after there own lusts,

4. And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

5. For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water:

6. Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished:

7. But the heavens and the earth which are now by the same word are kept in

store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

2 Pet. ii. 1. But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

2. And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the truth shall be evil spoken of.

3. And through coveteousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not.

See whole chapter.

1 John iv. 1. Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

2. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God:

3. And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God. And this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.

2. John i. 7. For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver, and an antichrist.

Jude i. 17. But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ ;

18. How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts.

19. These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the Spirit.

Luke vi. 26. Wo unto you, when all men shall speak well of you ! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

FRUITS OF FAITH.

Rom. x. 17. So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

Rom. v. 1. Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God, through our Lord Jesus Christ ;

2. By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

Heb. xi. 1. Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen :

2. For by it the elders obtained a good report.

3. Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.

4. By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh.

5. By faith Enoch was translated, that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God.

6. But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

32. And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae, of David also and Samuel, and of the prophets:

33. Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions,

34. Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valient in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35. Women received their dead raised to life again : and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance ; that they might obtain a better resurrection :

36. And others had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment :

37. They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword : they wandered about in sheepskins, and goat skins ; being destitute, afflicted, tormented :

38. (Of whom the world was not worthy :) they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth.

39. And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise :

40. God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect.

Jas ii. 17. Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.

18. Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works : show me thy faith without thy works, and I will show thee my faith by my works.

19. Thou believest that there is one God ; thou doest well ; the devils also believe, and tremble.

20. But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

21. Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?

22. Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

23. And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness: and he was called the friend of God.

24. Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.

25. Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

26. For as the body without the Spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

Matt. xxi 21. Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you. If ye have faith and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which is done to the fig-tree, but also, if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done. See also Mark xi. 22.

Jude i. 3. Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write

unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

Faith in the Administrator.—See Matt. xvii. 14-20.

Faith in the one administered to.—See Matt. ix. 2, 22, 28, 29; do. xiv. 31, 35, 36; do. xv. 28; do. xx. 33, 34; Mark ii. 5; do. v. 34; do. vi. 5; do. ix. 24; Luke v. 12, 13; do. vii. 3-9; viii. 45; Acts iii. 16; do. xiv. 9; do. xix. 12.



FULNESS OF THE GENTILES, TIMES OR NATIONS.

Gen. xv. 16. But in the fourth generation they shall come hither again: for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full.

Luke xxi. 24. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

Rom. xi. 25. For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, (lest ye should be wise in your own conceits,) that blindness in part is happened unto Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.

Eph. i. 10. That in the dispensation of the fulness of times, he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth, even in him.

Gal. iv. 4. But when the fulness of time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law.

— — — 0 — — —

GATHERING OF ISRAEL IN THE LAST DAYS.

Isa. ii. 2. And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it.

3. And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths. for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem.

Isa. xi. 10. And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious.

11. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall set his hand again the second time to recover the remnant of his people, which shall be left from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Cush, and from Elam, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the islands of the sea.

12. And he shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth.

See context.

Jer. xxxi. 7. For thus saith the Lord; Sing with gladness for Jacob; and shout among the chief of the nations: publish ye, praise ye, and say, O Lord, save thy people, the remnant of Israel.

8. Behold, I will bring them from the north country, and gather them from the coasts of the earth, and with them the blind and the lame, the woman with child and her that tarvaeth with child together: a great company shall return thither.

9. They shall come with weeping, and with supplications will I lead them: I will cause them to walk by the rivers of waters in a straight way, wherein they shall not stumble: for I am a father to Israel, and Ephraim is my first born. (See whole chap.)

Deut. xxx. 1. And it shall come to pass, when all these things are come upon thee, the blessing and the curse, which I have set before thee, and thou shalt call them to mind among all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath driven thee,

2. And shalt return unto the Lord thy God, and shalt obey his voice, according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children, with all thine heart, and with all thy soul;

3. That then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity, and have compassion upon thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath scattered thee.

4. If any of thine be driven out unto the outmost parts of heaven, from thence will the Lord thy God gather thee, and from thence will he fetch thee:

5. And the Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed, and thou shalt possess it; and he will do thee good, and multiply thee above thy fathers:

6. And the Lord thy God will circumsise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live.

7. And the Lord thy God will put all these

curses upon thine enemies, and on them that hate thee, which persecuted thee.

8. And thou shalt return and obey the voice of the Lord, and do all his commandments which I command thee this day.

Ps. cxlvii. 2. The Lord doth build up Jerusalem: he gathereth together the outcasts of Israel.

Jer. L. 3. For out of the north there cometh up a nation against her, which shall make her land desolate, and none shall dwell therein: they shall remove, they shall depart, both man and beast.

4. In those days, and in that time, saith the Lord, the children of Israel shall come, they and the children of Judah together, going and weeping: they shall go, and seek the Lord their God.

5. They shall ask the way to Zion with their faces thitherward, saying, Come, and let us join ourselves to the Lord, in a perpetual covenant that shall not be forgotten.

isa. xiv. 1. For the Lord will have mercy on Jacob, and will yet choose Israel, and set them in their own land: and the strangers shall be joined with them, and they shall cleave to the house of Jacob.

2. And the people shall take them, and bring them to their place: and the house of Israel shall possess them in the land of

the Lord for servants and handmaids: and they shall take them captives, whose captives they were; and they shall rule over their oppressors.

Luke xxi. 24. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

Isa. xviii. 7. In that time shall the present be brought unto the Lord of hosts of a people scattered and peeled, and from a people terrible from their beginning hitherto; a nation meted out and trodden under foot, whose land the rivers have spoiled, to the place of the name of the Lord of hosts, the mount Zion.

Isa. xxvii. 12. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall beat off from the channel of the river unto the stream of Egypt, and ye shall be gathered one by one, O ye children of Israel.

13. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the great trumpet shall be blown, and they shall come which were ready to perish in the land of Assyria, and the outcasts in the land of Egypt, and shall worship the Lord in the holy mount at Jerusalem.

Isa. xxix. 22, . Therefore thus saith the

24

Lord, who redeemed Abraham, concerning the house of Jacob, Jacob shall not now be ashamed, neither shall his face now wax pale.

23. But when he seeth his children, the work of mine hands, in the midst of him, they shall sanctify my name, and sanctify the Holy One of Jacob, and shall fear the God of Israel.

24. They also that erred in spirit shall come to understanding, and they that murmured shall learn doctrine.

Isa. xxxv. 10. And the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away.

Obad. i. 17. But upon mount Zion shall be deliverance, and there shall be holiness; and the house of Jacob shall possess their possessions.

Gen. xiii. 14-17; xv. 18-21; xvii. 18-21; xxvi. 3, 4; xxxv. 12; Acts vii. 2-5; Isa. i. 25-28; x. 20-22; xi. 10-16; xviii. 7; xxix. 22-24; xl. 1, 2; xli. 8-13; xliii. 1, 7, 16-20; xlix. 5-26; li. 11-23; lii.; liv. 1-7-10-17; lvi. -8; lviii.; lx.; lxi. 4-6; lxii.; lxv. 17-25; lxvi. 18-23. Jer. iii. 14-18; xii. 14-16; xvi. 14-16; xxiii. 2-8; xxx.; xxxi.; xxxii. 36-44; xxxiii. 6-26; xlvi. 27, 28;

i. 19, 20, 28; ii. 10, 50; ii. 6. Rev. xviii. 18. Mat. xxv. 6. Ezek. xvi. 60-62; xx. 33-42; xxxvi. 8-38; xxxvii. 20-28; xxxviii. 8-12, 24-29; xxxix. 25-29; xliii. 7; xlv. 7, 8; xlvii. 13, 14, 21-23; xlviii. Hosea i. 10, 11; iii. 4, 5; xiv. 7, 8. Joel iii. 1, 2, 15, 16-19. Amos ix. 9-15. Micah ii. 12, 13; iv. 1-4, 6, 7; vii. 18-20. Zeph. iii. 14-20. Zech. ii.; x. 6-12.

Book of Mormon 1 Nephi iii. 7. Nephi vii. 2. 2 Nephi i. 1, 2; x. 4. Nephi ix. 19.

Book of Covenants xxviii. (x) 2; xxviii. 5; cviii. 2, 3; x (xxviii) 1; xxxvi. 12.

GOD AN UNCHANGEABLE BEING.

Psa. cii. 27. But thou [God] art the same, and thy years shall have no end.

Mal. iii. 6. For I am the Lord, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed.

Heb. xiii. 8. Jesus Christ the same yesterday and to-day, and forever.

Jas. i. 17. Every good gift, and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

GODHEAD.

GOD IS A PERSON NOT OMNIPRESENT.

Gen. xviii. 1. And the Lord appeared

unto him in the plains of Mamre: and he sat in the tent door in the heat of the day.

Gen. xi. v. And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded.

7. Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech.

1 Kings xix. 11. And he said, Go forth, and stand upon the mount before the Lord. And, behold, the Lord passed by, and a great and strong wind rent the mountains, and brake in pieces the rocks before the Lord; but the Lord was not in the wind: and after the wind, an earthquake; but the Lord was not in the earthquake.

12. And after the earthquake a fire; but the Lord was not in the fire: and after the fire a still small voice.

Gen. xxxv. 9. And God appeared unto Jacob again, when he came out of Padan-aram, and blessed him.

13. And God went up from him in the place where He talked with him.

Exod. xix. 20. And the Lord came down upon mount Sinai, on the top of the mount: and the Lord called Moses up to the top of the mount; and Moses went up.

Num. xi. 25. And the Lord came down in a cloud, and spake unto him, and took of

the spirit that was upon him, and gave it unto the seventy elders; and it came to pass, that, when the Spirit rested upon them, they prophesied, and did not cease.

Zech. viii. 3. Thus saith the Lord; I am returned unto Zion, and will dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: and Jerusalem shall be called a city of truth; and the mountain of the Lord of hosts, the holy mountain.

Gen. xvii. 22. And God went up from Abraham. — xviii. 21. I will go down now and see. — 22. And they walked toward Sodom — 33. And the Lord went His way. — Ex. xxiv. 12. And the Lord said unto Moses, Come up to me in the mount. — Isa. lxvi. 18. And they shall come and see my glory. — Jer. vii. 10. And come and stand before me in this house. — 1 Kings viii. 13. I have built an house for thee to abide in for ever. — Exod xxxix. 45. And I will dwell among the children of Israel. — Isa. lxiii. 1. Who is this that cometh from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah. — Hab. iii. 3. God came from Teman, and the Holy One from Mount Paran. — Num. xxiii. 4. And God met Balaam. — Deut. xxxiii. 4. For the Lord thy God walketh in the midst of the camp. — Jer. xxvii. 22. There shall they be until the

day that I visit them.—Amos ix. 1. I saw the Lord standing upon the altar.—Luke iii. 22. And the Holy Ghost descended in bodily shape.

BOOK OF MORMON.—Alma xiii. 8; Ether i. 3, 5.

BOOK OF COVENANTS.—Sec. 22, p. 7.

GOD A PERSONAL BEING.

Ex. xxxi. 18. And he gave unto Moses, when he had made an end of communing with him upon mount Sinai, two tables of testimony, tables of stone, written with the finger of God.

Ex. xxiv. 10. And they saw the God of Israel: and there was under his feet as it were a paved work of a sapphire-stone, and as it were the body of heaven in his clearness.

11. And upon the nobles of the children of Israel he laid not his hand: also they saw God, and did eat and drink.

Job xxxvii. 10. By the breath of God frost is given; and the breadth of the waters is straightened.

Ps. xi. 4. The Lord is in his holy temple, the Lord's throne is in heaven: his eyes behold, his eyelids try the children of men.

Num. xxv. 16. And the Lord spake unto Moses.

Isa. xxx. 27. Behold, the name of the Lord cometh from far, burning with his anger, and the burden thereof is heavy; his lips are full of indignation, and his tongue as a devouring fire:

28. And his breath as an overflowing stream.

Isa. lix. 1. Behold, the Lord's hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear.

2 Kings xix. 16. Lord, bow down thine ear, and hear; open, Lord, thine eyes and see; and hear the words of Senecharib, which hath sent him to reproach the living God.

Jer xxi. 5. And I myself will fight against you with an out stretched hand, and with a strong arm, even in anger, and in fury, and in great wrath.

Jer. iv. 19. My bowels, my bowels! I am pained at my very heart: my heart maketh a noise in me.

Ezek. i. 27. And I saw the color of amber, as the appearance of fire round about within it; from the appearance of his loins even upward, and from the appearance of his loins even downward, I saw as it were the appearance of fire, and it had brightness round about.

Gen. vi. 6. And it repented the Lord

that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart.

Gen. ix. 6. Whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed; for in the image of God made he man.

Ex xxxiii 22. And it shall come to pass, while my glory passeth by, that I will put thee in a cleft of the rock, and will cover thee with my hand while I pass by;

23. And I will take away my hand, and thou shalt see my back parts: but my face shall not be seen.

Jer. i. 9. Then the Lord put forth his hand, and touched my mouth: and the Lord said unto me, Behold, I have put my words in thy mouth.

Phil. ii. 5. Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:

6. Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God.

Col. i. 15. Who is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of every creature.

Col. ii. 9. For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.

Heb. i. 3. Who, being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high.

Ps. xviii. 15. Then the channels of waters were seen, and the foundations of the world were discovered at thy rebuke, O Lord, at the blast of the breath of thy nostrils.

John vi. 46. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

Ps. xxxiv. 15. The eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous, and his ears are open unto their cry.

16. The face of the Lord is against them that do evil, to cut off the remembrance of them from the earth.

See also Gen. i. 25, 27; viii. 21; iv. 14; vi. 6; xix. 13; vi. 8; Exo. xv. 6, 8, 16, 17; vi. 6; xxxiii. 11; Num. vi. 25; xii. 8; Deut. v. 15; xi. 12; xxiii. 23; xxxi. 17; xxxiv. 5, 6; 2 Sam. xxii. 16; 2 Chron. xvi. 9; Job. i. 11; iv. 11; xiii. 8; xxxix. 20; xli. 20; Ps. ii. 5; xiii. 1; xviii. 8; xv. 3; li. 9; lxxxix. 13; xcvi. 1; cxxxix. 16; Prov. xv. 3; Isa. xl. 10, 12; Isa. xlviii. 13; lv. 11; li. 5; lii. 10; liii. 1; lxxv. 5; Ezek. xxxiv. 1; xxxviii. 18; xliii. 7; Nah. ii. 1; Zech. xiv. 4; Matt. ii. 6; Mal. xviii. 10; Luke i. 76; Heb. i. 10; ii. 7; Rev. i. 14.

Isa. xliii. 10; Acts xvii. 29; 1 Cor. xi. 7; xv. 49; 2 Cor. iv. 4; Rom. i. 19, 20.

GOD OMNIPRESENT BY HIS SPIRIT.

Ps. cxxxix. 7. Whither shall I go from thy Spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence?

8. If I ascend up into heaven thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there.

9. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea;

10. Even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me.

11. If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me.

12. Yea, the darkness hideth not from thee; but the night shineth as the day; the darkness and the light are both alike to thee.

Gen. i. 2. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep; and the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

2 Chron. xvi. 9. For the eyes of the Lord run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to shew himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward him.

Job. xxvi. 13. By his Spirit he hath garnished the heavens; his hand hath formed the crooked serpent.

Jer. xxiii. 23. Am I a God at hand, saith the Lord, and not a God afar off?

24. Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the Lord. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the Lord.

2 Cor. iii. 17. Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

Isa. xxxii. 15. Until the Spirit be poured upon us from on high, and the wilderness be a fruitful field, and the fruitful field be counted for a forest.

Eph. iv. 6. One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

Job xxxiii. 4 The Spirit of God hath made me.—Ps. lxxv. 6 His strength setteth fast the mountains.—cl. 1 The firmament of His power.—Jer. x. 12 He made the earth by his power.—Joel ii. 28—31 God will perform wonders in the last days by His Spirit.—Micah iii. 8 I am full of power by the Spirit of the Lord.—Acts xvii. 28 In Him we live and move, and have our being.—1 Cor. v. 4 With my Spirit, and the power of our Lord Jesus Christ.—vi. 14 God will raise us up by His power.—ii. 10 The Spirit of God searcheth all things.—Eph. i. 23 The fulness of Him that filleth

all in all.—Col. iii. 11 But Christ is all and in all.

BOOK OF D. AND C.—Sec. 83: (4) 7; 85: (7) 2, 3. See whole Section.

JESUS A SEPARATE PERSONAGE FROM THE FATHER.

Heb. i. 3: Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high.

John xvii. 1. These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee.

3. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent.

4. I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.

5. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

25 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

26. And I have declared unto them thy

name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me, may be in them, and I in them.

John v. 19. Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.

20. For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel.

21. For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will.

Luke ix. 35. And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.

John xvi. 28. I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

Mark xiv. 36. And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee; take away this cup from me: nevertheless, not what I will, but what thou wilt.

Matt. xxvii. 46. And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

Luke xxiii. 46. And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, and said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.

TEXTS WHICH ARE USED TO OPPOSE THE IDEA OF GOD'S PERSONAL EXISTENCE.

Note to the Reader.—The following quotations are nearly, if not all the texts that can be, even by the aid of sophistry or with any show of honesty, applied to sustain the idea that God has neither body nor parts; and it will be apparent to every candid and impartial person, that these passages will bear no such application; but wishing to be impartial in the composition of this work, therefore I insert them.

Ps. lxiii. 7. Because thou hast been my help, therefore in the shadow of thy wings will I rejoice. See Ps. xvii. 8.

Ps. xci. 4. He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust.

Ps. cxxxix. 7. Whither shall I go from thy Spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence?

8. If I ascend up into heaven thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there.

9. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea:

10. Even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me.

Prov. xv. iii. The eyes of the Lord are

in every place, beholding the evil and the good.

John i. 18. No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.

John iv. 24. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in truth.

John v. 37. And the Father himself which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape.

2 Cor. iii. 17. Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

1 Tim. i. 17. Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be glory forever and ever. Amen.

1 Tim. vi. 14. That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ:

15. Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords;

16. Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto: whom no man hath seen, nor can see; to whom be honor and power everlasting. Amen.

1 Jno. iv. 12. No man hath seen God at any time.

2 Chron. xvi. 9. For the eyes of Lord run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to shew himself strong in behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward him.

Deut. iv. 24. For the Lord thy God is a consuming fire, even a jealous God.

See Heb. xii. 29.

THE NAMES, TITLES, AND CHARACTERS
GIVEN TO JESUS

Second Adam, 1 Cor. xv. 22, 45.—Advocate, Rom. viii. 34; Heb. vii. 25; ix. 24; 1 John ii. 1.—Alpha and Omega, Rev. i. 8; xxii. 13.—Wonderful, John xiii. 18; Isa. ix. 6.—Bright and Morning Star, Rev. xxii. 16.—True, Rev. iii. 7; xix. 11.—Day Spring, Luke i. 7, 8.—Stone, 1 Pet. ii. 4, 6.—Counsellor, Isa. ix. 6.—Bridegroom, Matt. ix. 15; xxv. 1, 13; Mark ii. 19; Luke v. 34.—Surety, Heb. vii. 22.—Star and Sceptre, Num. xxiv. 17.—Son of David, Matt. ix. 27; xxi. 9; Luke i. 32.—Son of Man, Matt. viii. 20.—Only Begotten Son, John i. 14, 18; iii. 16, 18; 1 John iv. 9; Heb. i. 6.—First Begotten, Heb. i. 6; Rev. i. 5.—Son of God, Matt. iii. 17; viii. 29; Rev. ii. 18.—Ruler, Mic. v. 2.—Savior, Luke ii. 11; Acts v. 31.—Son of the Highest, Luke i. 32.—Shepherd, Zech.

xiii. 7 ; John x. 11.—Stone, Ps. cxviii. 22 ; 1 Pet. ii. 4 ; Matt. xxi. 42 ; Mark xii. 10.—God blessed forever, Rom. ix. 5.—Faithful and True, Rev. xix. 11.—Witness, Rev. i. 5 ; iii. 14.—Everlasting Father, Isa. ix. 6.—Mediator, 1 Tim. ii. 5 ; Heb. viii. 6 ; ix. 15 ; xii. 12.—Prince of Life, Acts iii. 15.—Prince of Peace, Isa. ix. 6.—Prophet, Deut. xviii. 18.—Root and offspring of David, Rev. xxii. 16.—Redeemer, Job xix. 25 ; Isa. lix. 20.—Lion of the tribe of Judah, Rev. v. 5.—Lord of Glory, 1 Cor. ii. 8.—Lamb of God, John i. 36.—King of kings and Lord of lords, Rev. xvii. 14, xix. 16.—King of the Jews, Mat. ii. 2.—King of Israel, John i. 49.—Just One, Acts iii. 14, vii. 52, xxii. 14.—The Mighty God, Isa. ix. 6.—Image of God, 2 Cor. iv. 4.—Horn of Salvation, Luke i. 69.

BOOK OF MORMON.—Jacob iii. 2.—Moses i. 14.—Nephi iv. 8.

THE UNITY OF THE KNOWLEDGE, POWER, WISDOM AND INTELLIGENCE OF THE FATHER, SON AND HOLY GHOST.

1 John v. 6. This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.

7. For there are three that bear record

in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.

John xvii. 11. And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one as we are.

21. That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

22. And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one;

23. I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

24. Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.

John viii. 16. And yet if I judge, my judgment is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.

18. I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me.

John x. 30. I and the Father are one.—xiv. 10 Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me.—xvi. 15 All things that the Father hath are mine.—xvii. 10. All mine are thine, and thine are mine.—11. That they may be one as we are.—1 Cor. viii. 6. There is but one God of whom are all things. And one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things.—Col. i. 19. It pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell.

BOOK OF MORMON.—2 Nephi xiii. 6; Mosiah viii. 5; Alma viii. 10; Nephi iv. 8; v. 8; Ether i. 8; ii. 1.

DOCTRINE AND COVENANTS.—Sec. 90: (88) 1; 84: (11) 1; 76: (92) 5; 32: (13) 5.

PLURALITY OF GODS.

Ps. lxxxii. 1. God standeth in the congregation of the mighty; he judgeth among the Gods.

6. I have said, Ye are Gods; and all of you are children of the Most High.

7. But ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes.

Rev. i. 6. And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

1 Tim. vi. 15. Which in his time he shall shew who is the blessed and only Poten-

tate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords ;
 John xiv. 12. Verily, verily, I say unto
 you, He that believeth on me, the works
 that I do shall he do also ; and greater
 works than these shall he do ; because I
 go unto my Father.

Ex. xxii. 28. Thou shall not revile the
 Gods.

Ex. xv. 11. Who is like thee, O Lord,
 among the Gods.

Deut. x. 17. For the Lord your God is
 God of Gods, and Lord of Lords : a great
 God, a mighty and a terrible.

Josh. xxii. 22. The Lord God of Gods,
 the Lord God of Gods, He knoweth.

Ps. xcv. 3. For the Lord is a great God,
 and a great King above all Gods.

Ps. xcvi. 9 For thou art high above all
 the earth, thou art exalted far above all
 Gods.

7 Worship him all ye Gods.

Ps. lxxxvi. 8 Among the Gods there is
 none like unto thee.

Ps. cxxxvi. 2 O give thanks unto the
 God of Gods.

3 O give thanks to the Lord of Lords.

Ps. cxxxviii. 1 I will praise thee with
 my whole heart : before the gods will I
 sing praise unto thee.

2 Chron. ii. 5 And the house which I

build is great, for great is our God above all Gods.

Gen. i. 26 And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness.

Gen. xi. 6 And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do.

7 Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech.

John x. 34 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?

35 If he called them gods unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture can not be broken;

36 Say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God?

37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.

Dan. xi. 36 And the king shall do according to his will; and he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every god, and shall speak marvelous things against the God of gods, and shall prosper till the indignation be accomplished: for

that, that is determined shall be done.

1 Cor. viii. 5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many.)

6 But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.

John v. 19 Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.

Rev. xiv. 1. And I looked, and lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Zion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads.

Rev. xvii. 14 These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings; and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful.

1 John iii. 2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

Phil. iii. 20 For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ:

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

Rev. iii. 12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

Rev. xxi. 7 He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

Rev. xx. 4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God.

Matt. v. 48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

Rom. viii. 16 The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God :

17 And if children, then heirs : heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

Gal. iv. 7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son ; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.

BOOK OF MORMON.—Alma ix. 5 ; xix. 10. 2 Nephi i. 8.

BOOK OF D. AND C.—76 : (92) 5 ; 50 : (17) 6 ; 76 : (92) 5, 7.

See Book of Abraham, in the *Times and Seasons* of March 1 and 15, 1842, or *Herald*, Vol. 3, No. 1. See also the last sermon of Joseph Smith the Martyr, and the New Translation of the Bible.

—o—

GOSPEL OF CHRIST.

THE GOSPEL AS THE PLAN OF SALVATION.

Rom. i. 15. So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16. For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ : for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth ; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

Gal. i. 6. I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ, unto another gospel:

7. Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.

8. But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

9. As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed.

Eph. i. 13. In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also, after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that Holy Spirit of promise.

Eph. iii. 4. Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ.

2 Thess. i. 7 And to you, who are troubled, rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels,

8 In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.

1 Pet. iv. 17 For the time is come that

judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?

2 Thess. ii. 13 But we are bound to give thanks always to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth:

14 Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

2 Tim. i. 8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God;

9 Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began;

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Savior Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel.

FAITH IN GOD.

Heb. xi. 6 But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh

to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

John v. 24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

Mark xi. 22 And Jesus answering, saith unto them, Have faith in God.

1 John v. 10 He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God, hath made him a liar, because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son.

FAITH IN THE SON OF GOD.

See last quotation.

John iii. 16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him, should not perish, but have everlasting life.

Jas. ii. 17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead being alone.

26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

Gal. v. 6 For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love.

Matt. x. 40 He that receiveth you, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

FAITH IN REPENTANCE.

Matt. iii. 7 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance.

Acts ii. 38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Matt. iv. 17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

Mark vi. 12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

Luke xxiv. 46 And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day;

47 And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

48 And ye are witnesses of these things.

Acts xx. 20 And how I kept back

nothing that was profitable unto you, but have shewed you, and have taught you publicly, and from house to house,

21 Testifying both to the Jews and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.

Rom. ii. 4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness, and forbearance, and long-suffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?

NECESSITY OF BAPTISM.

Matt. iii. 13 Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.

14 But John forbade him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

15 And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

John iii. 5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water, and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

2 Cor. v. 17 Therefore, if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

Gal. vi. 15. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

John i. 12. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name :

13. Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

Jas. i. 18. Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of first-fruits of his creatures.

Col. iii. 9. Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds ;

10. And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him.

Titus iii. 5. Not by words of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost ;

6. Which he shed on us abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Savior.

Matt. xix. 28. And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of

his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

Luke vii. 29 And all the people that heard him, and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John.

30 But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.

Mark xvi. 15 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.

16 He that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved; but he that believeth not, shall be damned.

Acts xvi. 25 And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediately all the doors were opened, and every one's bands were loosed.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison-doors open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had been fled.

28 But Paul cried out with a loud voice, saying, Do thyself no harm: for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before Paul and Silas ;

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved ?

31 And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

32 And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed their stripes ; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.

Acts ii. 38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Acts xxii. 16 And now why tarriest thou ? arise and, be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

BAPTISM FOR THE REMISSION OF SINS.

See the last two quotations.

Mark i. 4 John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins.

Zech. xiii. 1 In that day there shall be

a fountain opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness.

Isa. i. 16 Wash ye, make you clean: put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes; cease to do evil.

Isa. iv. 3 And it shall come to pass, that he that is left in Zion, and he that remaineth in Jerusalem, shall be called holy, even every one that is written among the living in Jerusalem:

4 When the Lord shall have washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and shall have purged the blood of Jerusalem from the midst thereof by the spirit of judgment, and by the spirit of burning.

5 And the Lord will create upon every dwelling place of mount Zion, and upon her assemblies, a cloud and smoke by day, and the shining of a flame of fire by night: for upon all the glory shall be a defence.

7 And there shall be a tabernacle for a shadow in the day time from the heat, and for a place of refuge, and for a covert from storm and from rain.

SUBJECTS FOR BAPTISM—FAITH AND REPENTANCE PRECEDE IT.

Mark xvi. 16 He that believeth and is

baptized, shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.

Acts viii. 12 And when they believed Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women.

36 And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, here is water; what doth hinder me to be baptized?

37 And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.

Matt. iii. 7 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance.

Mark i. 4 John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance, for the remission of sins.

5 And there went out unto him all

the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.

BAPTISM IS IMMERSION.

See the last quotation.

Matt iii. 5 Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan,

6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

John iii. 23 And John also was baptizing in Ænon, near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came and were baptized.

Acts viii. 38. And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.

Col. ii. 10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power:

11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ:

12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

Rom. vi. 3 Know ye not that so many

of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ, were baptized into his death?

4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

5 For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection.

Mark i. 9 And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him.

BAPTISM OF THE HOLY GHOST.

See the last quotation.

Matt. iii. 11 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire.

Acts ii. 1 And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound

from heaven, as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.

3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them.

4 And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

Acts ii. 38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

39 For the promise is unto you, and to your children and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.

Acts viii. 12 But when they believed Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women.

13 Then Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were done.

14 Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John:

15 Who, when they were come down, prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Ghost:

16 (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.)

17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money,

19 Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost.

20 But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.

Accts x. 44 While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision which believed, were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the Holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnify God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that

these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we?

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord.

See the whole of Acts x. and Acts xi. 1-18, which show that although Cornelius received the Holy Ghost before he was baptized he was commanded by Peter, nevertheless, to be baptized after an angel had said unto Cornelius, concerning Peter,

(Acts x. 6) He shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.

LAYING ON OF HANDS.

See Acts 8: 12-20, on page 315 of this book.

Acts xix. 1 And it came to pass, that while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts, came to Ephesus; and finding certain disciples,

2 He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost.

3 And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism.

4 Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.

5 When they heard this, they were

baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

6 And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelve.

Heb. vi. 1 Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment.

Acts ix. 11 And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and inquire in the house of Judas for one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold he prayeth,

12 And hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias, coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight. * * *

17 And Ananias went his way, and entered into the house: and putting his hands on him, said, Brother Saul, the Lord, (even Jesus that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest) hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the Holy Ghost.

18 And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales: and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

Jas. v. 14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord:

15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

1 Tim. iv. 14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery.

EFFECTS OF THE GIFT OF THE HOLY GHOST.

See Acts ii. 1-4, on page 314 of this book.

See Acts xix. 5, 6, on page 317 of this book.

See 1 Cor. xii. 4-31; and Acts xiii. and xiv.

Mark xiii. 11 But when they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost.

Luke xii. 12 For the Holy Ghost shall

teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.

John xiv. 26 But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

Acts vii. 55 But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God.

Acts viii. 18 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money.

Acts xiii. 1 Now there were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the Tetrach, and Saul.

2 As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabus and Saul, for the work whereunto I have called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away.

4 So they being sent forth by the Holy

8 But Elymus the sorcerer, (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputy from the faith.

9 Then Saul, (who is also called Paul) filled with the Holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O full of all subtilty, and all mischief, thou child of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord?

11 And now behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darkness; and he went about seeking some to lead him by the hand.

Acts xv. 28 For it seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things;

29 That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keep yourselves ye shall do well. Fare ye well.

Acts xvi. 6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia;

7 After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 And they passing by Mysia, came down to Troas.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night: There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come over into Macedonia and help us.

10 And after he had seen the vision, immediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia, assuredly gathering, that the Lord had called us for to preach the gospel unto them.

Acts xx. 22 And now behold, I go bound in the spirit unto Jerusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall me there:

23 Save that the Holy Ghost witnesseth in every city, saying, that bonds and afflictions abide me. * * *

28 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock over which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

Acts xxi. 8 And the next day we that were of Paul's company departed, and came unto Cesarea; and we entered into the house of Philip the evangelist, which

was one of the seven; and abode with him.

9 And the same man had four daughters, virgins, which did prophesy.

10 And as we tarried there many days, there came down from Judea a certain prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come unto us, he took Paul's girdle, and bound his own hands and feet, and said, Thus saith the Holy Ghost, So shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man that owneth this girdle, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.

See Acts xxviii. 25 : 1 Thess. i. 5 ; Heb. ii. 3, 4 ; & iii. 7, 8 ; 2 Pet. i. 21 ; Eph. i. 1, 13 ; & iv. 30.

ANTIQUITY OF THE GOSPEL.

Gal. iii. 8. And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed.

13 Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree:

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

15 Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though it be but a man's covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto.

16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.

17 And this I say, That the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise; but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.

1 Cor. x. 1 Moreover, brethren, I would not have you ignorant how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea;

2 And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea;

3 And did all eat the same spiritual meat;

4 And did all drink the same spiritual

drink: (For they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ.)

Heb. iii. 17 But with whom was he grieved forty years? was it not with them that had sinned, whose carcasses fell in the wilderness?

18 And to whom swear he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that believe not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief.

Heb. iv. 1 Let us therefore fear, lest a promise being left us of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.

2 For unto us was the gospel preached as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.

Titus i. 1 Paul, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledging of the truth which is after godliness;

2 In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began;

3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed unto me, according to the commandment of God our Savior.

Acts vii. 38 This is he, that was in the church in the wilderness with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sinai, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us.

John v. 46 For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me.

47 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

Rom. iv. 9 We say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness.

10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? Not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision.

11 And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised, that righteousness might be imputed to them also;

12 And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he should be the heir of the world was not to Abraham,

or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.

Gen. xiv. 18 And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God.

19 And he blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abram of the most high God, possessor of heaven and earth.

Heb. v. 6 As he saith also in another place, Thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchisedec. * *

10 Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

Heb. vi. 20 Whither the forerunner is for us entered, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

Heb. vii. 11 If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received the law,) what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?

See Heb. vii. 15-17, 21; 1 Pet. i. 19, 20; Rev. xiii. 8.

2 Pet. ii. 5 And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly.

Heb. xi. 7 By faith Noah, being warned

of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the *righteousness* which is by faith.

Rom. i. 16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

17 For therein is the *righteousness* of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.

BOOK OF MORMON.—Alma ix. 5; 2 Nephi vi. 9; Alma ix. 6; 1 Nephi iii. 3, 5, 6, 8; Helaman iii. 5, 6; Moroni vii. 3; Alma xix. 3, 4; Mosiah ii. 2, 3; 1 Nephi iii. 17; 2 Nephi vi. 15; xi. 5; xiii. 6; xv. 1; Mosiah iii. 2; i. 15; viii. 9; Helaman ii. 15; Mosiah ix. 8; Helaman v. 2, 9; Nephi xii. 4; Ether i. 8-10; v. 1, 2.

BOOK OF COVENANTS.—xxviii. (x.) 12; xvii. (ii.) 5; lxxxiii. (iv.) 2-4; xxxvi.

—o—

UNCHANGABLENESS OF THE GOSPEL.

1 John ii. 2 And he is the propitiation for our sins; and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

Acts iv. 12 Neither is there salvation in

any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved.

Gal. i. 6 I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ, unto another gospel:

7 Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ,

8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed.

Rom. iii. 23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;

24 Being justified freely by his grace, thro' the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:

25 Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God.

Mat. xxiv. 14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world, for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.

Rev. xiv. 6 And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people.

THE GOSPEL FOR THE DEAD.

Mal. iv. 5 Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord:

6 And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.

1 Cor. xv. 29 Else what shall they do which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for the dead?

See "Consciousness of the Wicked," page 129-145, and "Consciousness After Death," page 125-129.

—o—

GLORY OF THE SUN, MOON AND STARS, EMBLEMS OF THE ETERNAL STATES OF MANKIND.

CELESTIAL GLORY.

1 Cor. xv. 36 Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened except it die:

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but

bare grain ; it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain :

38 But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body.

39 All flesh is not the same flesh ; but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds,

40 There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial : but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another.

41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars ; for one star differeth from another star in glory.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption :

43 It is sown in dishonor, it is raised in glory : it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power :

44 It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. (a)

Rom. viii. 18 For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory that shall be revealed in us.

(a) H. v. 5, p. 97.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

20 For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope.

21 Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

22 For we know that the whole creation groaneth, and travaileth in pain together until now :

23 And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body. (a)

Isa. xi. 6 The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid ; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together ; and a little child shall lead them.

7 And the cow and the bear shall feed ; their young ones shall lie down together ; and the lion shall eat straw like the ox.

8 And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice's den.

(a) H. v. 5, p. 97.

9 They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea. (b)

Rev. v. 11 And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne, and the beasts, and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands:

12 Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honor, and glory, and blessing.

13 And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honor, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb forever and ever.

14 And the four beasts said; Amen. And the four and twenty elders fell down and worshipped him that liveth forever and ever. (b)

See B. of C. lxxvi. (xcii.) 7. (b)

2 Cor. xii. 2 I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of

the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) such an one caught up to the third heaven.

3 And I knew such a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth:)

4 How that he was caught up into *paradise*, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for man to utter. (b)

1 John iii. 2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is. (c)

Rev. xx. 4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

5 But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall

(b) II. v. 5, p. 98.

(c) II. v. 5, p. 99.

be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Christ a thousand years. (c)

Luke xiv. 14 And thou shalt be blessed : for they cannot recompense thee : for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just. (c)

John v. 28 Marvel not at this : for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,

29 And shall come forth ; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life ; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. (c)

Ps. xvii. 15 As for me, I will behold thy face in righteousness : I shall be satisfied, when I awake with thy likeness. (c)

Rom. vi. 5 If we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection. (c)

Phil. iii. 20 For our conversation is in heaven ; from whence also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ :

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself. (c)

1 Cor. xv. 22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

23 But every man in his own order :
Christ the first-fruits ; afterward they that
are Christ's at his coming. * *

45 And so it is written, The first man
Adam was made a living soul, the last
Adam was made a quickening spirit.

46 Howbeit, that was not first which
is spiritual, but that which is natural, and
afterward that which is spiritual.

47 The first man is of the earth, earthy
the second man is the Lord from heaven

48 As is the earthy, such are they also
that are earthy ; and as is the heavenly,
such are they also that are heavenly.

49 And as we have borne the image of
the earthy, we shall also bear the image
of the heavenly. (c)

Job xix. 23 O that my words were
now written ! O that they were printed
in a book !

24 That they were graven with an iron
pen and lead in the rock forever !

25 For I know that my Redeemer
liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter
day upon the earth :

26 And though after my skin worms
destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I
see God :

27 Whom I shall see for myself, and

mine eyes shall behold, and not another ;
though my reins be consumed within me.
(c)

See Ezek. xxxvii. 1-14. (e)

TERRESTRIAL GLORY.

John iii. 19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. [e]

John xv. 22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin : but now they have no cloak for their sin. [e]

Luke xii. 48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required ; and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more. [e]

Matt. xxv. 20 And so he that had received five talents, came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents : behold, I have gained besides them five talents more.

21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant ; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make

(c) II. v. 5, p. 99. (e) II. v. 5, p. 113.

thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

22 He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents besides them.

23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had received the one talent came, and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strewed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine.

26 His lord answered and said unto him, thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strewed:

27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him that hath ten talents.

29 For unto every one that hath shall

be given, and he shall have abundance; but from him that hath not, shall be taken away even that which he hath. [e]

Rom. iv. 15 Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression. [e]

Rom. v. 13 For until the law, sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law. [e]

Rom. ii. 12 For as many as have sinned without law, shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law, shall be judged by the law. * * *

14 For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these having not the law, are a law unto themselves. * *

16 In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel. [e]

Acts xvii. 22 Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious. * * *

30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent:

31 Because he hath appointed a day,

in the which he will judge the world in righteousness, by that man whom he hath ordained: whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead. [f]

Matt. xi. 22 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you.

23 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day.

24 But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgment than for thee. [f]

Matt. xvi. 27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works. [f]

Luke xxii. 28 Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations.

29 And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father has appointed unto me;

30 That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. [f]

1. Cor. vi. 2 Do ye not know that the

saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters? [f]

Isa. xiv. 1 For the Lord will have mercy on Jacob, and will yet choose Israel, and set them in their own land; and the strangers shall be joined with them, and they shall cleave to the house of Jacob.

2 And the people shall take them, and bring them to their place: and the house of Israel shall possess them in the land of the Lord for servants and handmaids: and they shall take them captives, whose captives they were; and they shall rule over their oppressors. [g]

Acts iv. 32 And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and of one soul: neither said any of them that aught of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had all things common. [g]

John xvii. 21 That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory which thou gavest me, I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one. [g]

Joel ii. 28 And it shall come to pass

(f) H. v. 5, p. 114. (g) H. v. 5, p. 115.

afterward; that I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions:

29 And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my Spirit. [g]

Ezek. xxxvii. 26 Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them; it shall be an everlasting covenant with them: and I will place them, and multiply them, and will set my sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore.

27 My tabernacle also shall be with them: yea, I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

28 And the heathen shall know that I the Lord do sanctify Israel, when my sanctuary shall be in the midst of them for ever more. [g]

Dan. vii. 18 But the saints of the Most High shall take the kingdom, and possess the kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever * * *

21 I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them;

22 Until the Ancient of days came, and

judgment was given to the saints of the Most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom.

27 And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the Most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him. [g]

See Joel i. 6, 13-16; Zech. xiv. 2; Ezek. 88; Joel ii. 15-17, 18, 27. [h]

Jer. xxx. 11 For I am with thee, saith the Lord, to save thee: though I make a full end of all nations whither I have scattered thee, yet will I not make a full end of thee: but I will correct thee in measure, and will not leave thee altogether unpunished. [i]

Isa. lx. 11 Therefore thy gates shall be open continually; they shall not be shut day nor night: that men may bring unto thee the forces of the Gentiles, and that their kings may be brought.

12 For the nation and kingdom that will not serve thee shall perish; yea, those nations shall be utterly wasted. [i]

Ps. ii. 8 Ask of me, and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and

(g) II. v. 5, p. 115. (i) II. v. 5, p. 117

the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession. [i]

Isa. liv. 3 For thou shalt break forth on the right hand and on the left; and thy seed shall inherit the Gentiles, and make the desolate cities to be inhabited. [i]

Amos ix. 11 In that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David that is fallen, and close up the breaches thereof; and I will raise up his ruins, and I will build it as in the days of old :

12 That they may possess the remnant of Edom, and of all the heathen which are called by my name, saith the Lord that doeth this. [i]

B. of C. xxvi (xcii.) 6. [i]

TELESTIAL GLORY.

1 Cor. xv. 21 For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars; for one star differeth from another star in glory.

Isa. xlv. 22 Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else.

23 I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, That unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear. (k)

Rom. xiv. 11. For it is written, As I live saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. (k)

Phil. ii. 9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name :

10 That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth. (k)

1 Cor. xii. 3 Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed; and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. (l)

Mat. xvi. 13 When Jesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I, the Son of man, am ?

14 And they said, Some say that thou art John the Baptist; some, Elias; and others, Jeremias, or one of the prophets.

15 He saith unto them, But who say ye that I am ?

16 And Simon Peter answered and said,

(k) H. v. 5, p. 145. (l) H. v. 5, p. 146.

Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.

17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. (1)

Rev. v. 13 And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honor, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb, for ever and ever. (1)

Eph. i. 9 Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure, which he hath purposed in himself:

10 That in the dispensation of the fullness of times; he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth, even in him. (1)

Gen. xii. 3 And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed. (1)

Acts iii. 25 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God

(1) H. v. 5, p. 146.

made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed. (1)

Gal. iii. 16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. (1)

Mat. xii. 31 Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.

32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. (1)

Mark iii. 28 Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme:

29 But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation. (1)

Heb. vi. 4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost,

(1) H. v. 5, p. 146.

5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come,

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame. (m)

Heb. x. 26 For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,

27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. (m)

1 John v. 16 If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it. (m)

B. of C. xcvi. (xcii.) 4.

1 Pet. iii. 18. For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:

19 By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison;

20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God wait-

ed in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls, were saved by water. (m)

1 Pet. iv. 5. Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.

6. For, for this cause was the gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit. (n)

Luke xxiii. 42. And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

43. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise. (n)

John xx. 17. Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God. (n)

John x. 15. As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

16. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there

shall be one fold, and one shepherd. (n)

Zech. ix. 10 And I will cut off the chariot from Ephraim, and the horse from Jerusalem, and the battle-bow shall be cut off; and he shall speak peace unto the heathen: and his dominion shall be from sea to sea, and from the river even to the ends of the earth.

11 As for thee also, by the blood of thy covenant I have sent forth thy prisoners out of the pit wherein is no water.

12 Turn you to the strong hold, ye prisoners of hope: even to-day do I declare that I will render double unto thee. (o)

Luke xvi. 19. There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen and fared sumptuously every day:

20 And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores,

21 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover, the dogs came and licked his sores.

22 And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom. The rich man also died, and was buried:

(n) II. v. 5, p. 148. (o) II. v. 5, p. 149.

23 And in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.

24 And he cried, and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue: for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you, cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence. (o)

Isa. xxiv. 20 The earth shall reel to and fro like a drunkard, and shall be removed like a cottage; and the transgression thereof shall be heavy upon it; and it shall fall, and not rise again.

21 And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall punish the host of the high ones that are on high, and the kings of the earth upon the earth.

22 And they shall be gathered together, as prisoners are gathered in the pit, and

shall be shut up in the prison, and after many days shall they be visited.

23 Then the moon shall be confounded, and the sun ashamed, when the Lord of hosts shall reign in mount Zion, and in Jerusalem, and before his ancients gloriously. (o)

Job xiv. 6 Turn from him, that he may rest, till he shall accomplish, as an hireling, his day.

7 For there is hope of a tree, if it be cut down, that it will sprout again, and that the tender branch thereof will not cease.

8 Though the root thereof wax old in the earth, and the stock thereof die in the ground;

9 Yet through the scent of water it will bud, and bring forth boughs like a plant.

10 But man dieth, and wasteth away: yea, man giveth up the ghost, and where is he? (o)

Isa. xlii. 6 If the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant for the people, for a light of the Gentiles;

7 To open the blind eyes, to bring out

